

# THE CHURCH OF GOD - JESUS CHRIST



**This set of Ten Meditations concentrates on that special Body of believers which belongs to Jesus Christ, because He bought it with His own Blood. This special series on The Church of God - Jesus Christ, was the first of many formal teaching sessions of study and meditation called “Seek Ye the Lord”. By its publication, it is hoped that many will grasp the Vision of Christ’s achievements for their lives, as the Word of God unfolds its revelations.**

# **THE CHURCH OF GOD - JESUS CHRIST -**

***S E E K   Y E   T H E   L O R D  
W E E K   1***

***Meditations on :***

***How God Brought The Church Into Being***

<b>Study No. 1</b>	<b>THE CHURCH OF GOD</b>	<b>3</b>
<b>Study No. 2</b>	<b>CALLED OUT BY GOD</b>	<b>13</b>
<b>Study No. 3</b>	<b>CONCEIVED BY GOD</b>	<b>23</b>
<b>Study No. 4</b>	<b>CONCEALED BY GOD</b>	<b>39</b>
<b>Study No. 5</b>	<b>CONFIRMED BY GOD</b>	<b>53</b>

# THE CHURCH OF GOD – JESUS CHRIST

## *Day 1 – The Church of God*

**1 Corinthians 10:32** "Give none offence, neither to the Jews, nor to the Gentiles, nor to the church of God."

### Jesus Christ Crucified Is the Foundation of This Church

**1 Corinthians 3:10 – 11** *"According to the grace of God which is given unto me, as a wise masterbuilder, I have laid the foundation, and another buildeth thereon. But let every man take heed how he buildeth thereupon. 11. For other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ."* We can say to ourselves, 'If my life is built on this Foundation then all else will be well. On what foundation am I building my Christian life?'

**Psalms 11:3** *"If the foundation be destroyed, what can the righteous do?"*

**Isaiah 28:16** *"Therefore thus saith the Lord GOD, Behold, I lay in Zion for a foundation a stone, a tried stone, a sure foundation: he that believeth shall not make haste."* This Foundation is laid by God. People try to make another beginning, but the Beginning is already there!

### The Church of God is built on the Foundation which is laid by God.

#### **1 Peter 2:1 – 8**

*"Wherefore laying aside all malice, and all guile, and hypocrisies, and envies, and all evil speakings, 2. As newborn babes, desire the sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby: 3. If so be ye have tasted that the Lord is gracious. 4. To whom coming, as unto a living stone, disallowed indeed of men, but chosen of God, and precious, 5. Ye also, as lively stones, are built up a spiritual house, an holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ. 6. Wherefore also it is contained in the scripture, Behold, I lay in Sion a chief corner stone, elect, precious: and he that believeth on Him shall not be confounded. 7. Unto you therefore which believe He is precious: but unto them which be disobedient, the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner, 8. And a rock of offence, even to them which stumble at the word, being disobedient: whereunto also they were appointed."*

The Foundation – a "stone" – is a Man taken from among men, as a stone common among stones. It is a **tested** Stone; tested by **God**, proved satisfactory to God, after God's Testing.

It is "**PRECIOUS**", meaning, very rare; not duplicated. There is none equal to it, and also, it is unable to be valued by man. It cannot be replaced. God Himself cannot find another Stone like this One – a Corner Stone, which is vital to the building.

**Psalms 127:1** *"Except the LORD build the house, they labour in vain that build it: except the LORD keep the city, the watchman waketh but in vain."*

**Isaiah 28:16**, again: “Therefore thus saith the Lord GOD, Behold, I lay in Zion for a foundation a stone, a tried stone, a sure foundation: he that believeth shall not make haste.” It is a **sure** Foundation only because God laid it. It is immovable, unalterable, unaffected by any thing.

The Church is not a human organization, but it is built on God’s Foundation.

This is **The Church**, as it is reported in the *Acts* of the Holy Ghost :

#### **Acts 2:37 – 47**

“Now when they heard this, they were pricked in their heart, and said unto Peter and to the rest of the apostles, Men and brethren, what shall we do? 38. Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost. 39. For the promise is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, even as many as the

Lord our God shall call. 40. And with many other words did he testify and exhort, saying, Save yourselves from this untoward generation. 41. Then they that gladly received his word were baptized: and the same day there were added unto them about three thousand souls. 42. And they continued stedfastly in the apostles’ doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers. 43. And fear came upon every soul: and many wonders and signs

were done by the apostles. 44. And all that believed were together, and had all things common; 45. And sold their possessions and goods, and parted them to all men, as every man had need. 46. And they, continuing daily with one accord in the temple, and breaking bread from house to house, did eat their meat with gladness and singleness of heart, 47. Praising God, and having favour with all the people. And the Lord added to the church daily such as should be saved.”

– This passage is the Blueprint for the whole Church. This Church consisted of people who were **completely changed toward God**.

**v37** “Now when they heard this, they were pricked in their heart, and said unto Peter and to the rest of the apostles, Men and brethren, what shall we do?” They were first pricked in their hearts; stirred out of themselves towards God.

**v41** “Then they that gladly received his word were baptized: and the same day there were added unto them about three thousand souls.” They showed spiritual exuberance. God’s Word had excited them! They had done what they were told to do by Peter and the other apostles :

**v38** “Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.” His clear Message was that they should repent toward God and be baptised in water as Jesus Christ was. The testimony of the Christian being baptised is to show a life **already immersed in the Word of God**... And they were all baptised with the Holy Spirit.

**v42** “And they continued stedfastly in the apostles’ doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers.” They received God’s Word eagerly, and hurried to be together for the Lord’s Supper because they were assured of God’s Presence when they came together in the Name of Jesus Christ. They gathered eagerly to pray because they wanted to contact God.

**v43** “And fear came upon every soul: and many wonders and signs were done by the apostles.” This fear of God that was upon them was communicated to others.

**vs44 – 47**      *"And all that believed were together, and had all things common; 45. And sold their possessions and goods, and parted them to all men, as every man had need. 46. And they, continuing daily with one accord in the temple, and breaking bread from house to house, did eat their meat with gladness and singleness of heart, 47. Praising God, and having favour with all the people. And the Lord added to the church daily such as should be saved."* They were of **one accord in their attitude to God**. They were **Christ-centred in their Vision** and were grateful to God, exhibiting their gratitude before all the people in praising God.

## The Universal Church . . .

### 1. Is The Body of Christ

These three Scriptures illustrate what is this Body :

**Ephesians 1:22 – 23**      *"And hath put all things under His feet, and gave Him to be the head over all things to the church, 23. Which is His body, the fulness of Him that filleth all in all."*

**Ephesians 4: 8 – 10**      *"Whereof He saith, When He ascended up on high, He led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men. 9. (Now that He ascended, what is it but that He also descended first into the lower parts of the earth? 10. He that descended is the same also that ascended up far above all heavens, that He might fill all things.)"*

**Colossians 1:24**      *"Who now rejoice in my sufferings for you, and fill up that which is behind of the afflictions of Christ in my flesh for His body's sake, which is the church."*

*"[T]he church, Which is His body"; "He ... gave gifts unto men"; "His body's sake, which is the church".* The Body of Christ is a group of people who live and work for **Christ**; not for themselves or for any other.

### 2. Is Quite A Different Organisation

The Church of God, that is, specifically Jesus Christ, the Universal Church, is a completely different organisation from anything else. It is separate from religion or race. It is nothing to do with any religious organisation or racial organisation. It is only to do with **whether Christ is pre-eminent**.

**1 Corinthians 10:32**      *"Give none offence, neither to the Jews, nor to the Gentiles, nor to the church of God."*

Paul shows here that there are now three distinct divisions of Mankind:

The Jews which represent Religion,  
The Gentiles which represent Race,  
The Church of God which represents Christ!

The Church of God is **quite separate** from every other thing.

**1 Corinthians 1:22 – 24**      *"For the Jews require a sign, and the Greeks seek after wisdom: 23. But we preach Christ crucified, unto the Jews a stumbling block, and unto the Greeks foolishness; 24. But unto them which are called, both Jews and Greeks, Christ the power of God, and the wisdom of God."*

**Christ Crucified** : That is What and Who they preached. That is the only sign of the True Church. Religious people always want a confirmation from God. Christ Crucified is a stumbling block to religions because it does not and can never exalt men. The Church of God exalts CHRIST only.

**Philippians 3:6**           *"Concerning zeal, persecuting the church; touching the righteousness which is in the law, blameless."*

This is what Paul confessed of his former behaviour, that, because of his religious zeal, he persecuted the Church of God.

### **1 Corinthians 1:18 – 24**

*"For the preaching of the cross is to them that perish foolishness; but unto us which are saved it is the power of God. 19. For it is written, I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and will bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent. 20. Where is the wise? where is the scribe? where is the disputer of this world? hath not God made foolish the wisdom of this world? 21. For after that in the wisdom of God, it pleased God by the foolishness of preaching to save them that believe. 22. For the Jews require a sign, and the Greeks seek after wisdom: 23. But we preach Christ crucified, unto the Jews a stumbling block, and unto the Greeks foolishness; 24. But unto them which are called, both Jews and Greeks, Christ the power of God, and the wisdom of God."*

So we see by these scriptures that the Church, the Church of God, is **entirely separate from every kind of background** we may come from, be it racial, national or religious.

## **3. Is Guided By Men Who Are Equipped by The Holy Spirit**

The Church, the Universal Church, of God is guided by men who are appointed and chosen, and who are guided directly and entirely **by God**, and equipped by the Holy Ghost.

We see that from these following passages :

**1 Corinthians 12:28**       *"And God hath set some in the church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, diversities of tongues."*

**Ephesians 4:8**           *"Wherefore He saith, When He ascended up on high, He led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men."*

### **Ephesians 4:11 – 16**

*"And He gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; 12. For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ: 13. Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ: 14. That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive; 15. But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into Him in all things, which is the head, even Christ: 16. From whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love."*

#### 4. Is A Warring Church

The Church of God, which is a Universal Church, is a warring Church. It is not in conflict with men or with human authorities. God wants men saved from their sinfulness. No! it is in direct conflict with Satan and the powers of darkness. The following two passages from *Ephesians* speak clearly of that:

**Ephesians 3:8 – 10**      *"Unto me, who am less than the least of all saints, is this grace given, that I should preach among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ; 9. And to make all men see what is the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the world hath been hid in God, who created all things by Jesus Christ: 10. To the intent that now unto the principalities and powers in heavenly places might be known by the church the manifold wisdom of God."*

**Ephesians 6:11 – 12**      *"Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. 12. For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places."*

#### 5. Has God Amongst The Members of The Church

**1 Timothy 3:15**      *"But if I tarry long, that thou mayest know how thou oughtest to behave thyself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth." The Church of God – that Universal Church – will **support** – be "the pillar" of – the Truth – God's Word – and is **also** the **basis** – "the ground" – for the Truth. **That** is the function of The Church; we are not called upon for anything else.*

#### 6. Longs For The Coming of Jesus Christ

The Church, which is the Universal Church, of God is known for its **longing** to see Christ in His marred Person. We should be and **must** be excited by the Coming of Jesus Christ.

**James 5:7 – 9**      *"Be patient therefore, brethren, unto the coming of the Lord. Behold, the husbandman waiteth for the precious fruit of the earth, and hath long patience for it, until he receive the early and latter rain. 8. Be ye also patient; stablish your hearts: for the coming of the Lord draweth nigh. 9. Grudge not one against another, brethren, lest ye be condemned: behold, the judge standeth before the door."*

#### The Local Church . . .

##### 1. Is Concerned With Obedience to The Word of God

The local church is concerned with its obedience to the Word of God, as it is written.

**Revelation 1:11**      *"Saying, I am Alpha and Omega, the first and the last: and, What thou seest, write in a book, and send it unto the seven churches which are in Asia; unto Ephesus, and unto Smyrna, and unto Pergamos, and unto Thyatira, and unto Sardis, and unto Philadelphia, and unto Laodicea."*

**Revelation 1:19**      *"Write the things which thou hast seen, and the things which are, and the things which shall be hereafter."*

These churches were well fed on the Word of God. They were well-versed. They were able to understand it and to communicate it to others as the pastors, ministers, of each church taught them.

**Revelation 2:1, 8, 12, 18**      *"Unto the angel of the church of Ephesus ... Smyrna ... Pergamos ... 3:1, 7, 14      Thyatira ... Sardis ... Philadelphia ... Laodicea write; ..."*

Within each of these seven letters comes two specific vital statements :

- i)      *"He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith to the churches"*  
**Revelation 2:7, 11, 17, 29, 3:6, 13, 22**
- ii)      *"To him that overcometh ..."*  
**Revelation 2:7, 11, 17, 26, 3:5, 12, 21**

He that has an ear, let him hear what is being spoken – which is God's Word, if it is by the Holy Spirit. Jesus Christ is demanding that their attention be given to it. A member of the Church of God is only able to overcome by the Word of God and by the Holy Spirit.

## 2. Is Responsible Directly To Jesus Christ

The local church, comprising both members and its minister, is responsible directly to Jesus Christ, and not to any other organisation.

**Revelation 1:13**      *"And in the midst of the seven candlesticks one like unto the Son of man clothed with a garment down to the foot, and girt about the paps with a golden girdle."*

**v16**      *"And He had in His right hand seven stars: and out of His mouth went a sharp two-edged sword: and His countenance was as the sun shineth in his strength."*

**v20**      *"The mystery of the seven stars which thou sawest in My right hand, and the seven golden candlesticks. The seven stars are the angels of the seven churches: and the seven candlesticks which thou sawest are the seven churches."*

**Revelation 2:1**      *"Unto the angel of the church of Ephesus write; These things saith He that holdeth the seven stars in His right hand, who walketh in the midst of the seven golden candlesticks."*

## 3. Has CHRIST As Its Head

CHRIST is the Head of the local church.

**Matthew 23:8 – 10**      *"But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your Master, even Christ; and all ye are brethren. 9. And call no man your father upon earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven. 10. Neither be ye called masters: for one is your Master, even Christ."*



## **The Gathered Church . . .**

The local church is gathered together for these three specific reasons :

### **1. For meeting with the Lord Jesus Christ by His Spirit in united worship of HIM.**

**1 Corinthians 11:18**     *"For first of all, when ye come together in the church, I hear that there be divisions among you; and I partly believe it."*

**vs20 – 22**                *"When ye come together therefore into one place, this is not to eat the Lord's supper. 21. For in eating every one taketh before other his own supper: and one is hungry, and another is drunken. 22. What? have ye not houses to eat and to drink in? or despise ye the church of God, and shame them that have not? What shall I say to you? shall I praise you in this? I praise you not."*

### **2. For the edification – the building up – of the body together.**

**1 Corinthians 14:4 – 5**   *"He that speaketh in an unknown tongue edifieth himself; but he that prophesieth edifieth the church. 5. I would that ye all spake with tongues, but rather that ye prophesied: for greater is he that prophesieth than he that speaketh with tongues, except he interpret, that the church may receive edifying."*

**v12**                        *"Even so ye, forasmuch as ye are zealous of spiritual gifts, seek that ye may excel to the edifying of the church."*

**v19**                        *"Yet in the church I had rather speak five words with my understanding, that by my voice I might teach others also, than ten thousand words in an unknown tongue."*

**vs23 – 26**

*"If therefore the whole church be come together into one place, and all speak with tongues, and there come in those that are unlearned, or unbelievers, will they not say that ye are mad? 24. But if all prophesy, and there*

*come in one that believeth not, or one unlearned, he is convinced of all, he is judged of all: 25. And thus are the secrets of his heart made manifest; and so falling down on his face he will worship God, and report that*

*God is in you of a truth. How is it then, brethren? when ye come together, every one of you hath a psalm, hath a doctrine, hath a tongue, hath a revelation, hath an interpretation. Let all things be done unto edifying."*

**vs27 – 28**

*"If any man speak in an unknown tongue, let it be by two, or at the most by three, and that by course; and let one interpret. 28. But if there be no interpreter, let him keep silence in the church; and let him speak to himself, and to God."*

**vs33 – 34**

*"For God is not the author of confusion, but of peace, as in all churches of the saints. 34. Let your women keep silence in the churches: for it is not permitted unto them to speak; [interrupt by asking questions in their ignorance from not being educated in the Scriptures] but they are commanded to be under obedience, as also saith the law [Genesis 3:16, "...and thy desire shall be [subject] to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee"]."*

### 3. To meet with Christ in the air when He comes for us.

#### **1 Thessalonians 4:15 – 18**

*"For this we say unto you by the word of the Lord, that we which are alive and remain unto the coming of the Lord shall not prevent [precede] them which are asleep. 16. For the Lord Him-*

*self shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: 17. Then we which are alive and remain*

*shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord. 18. Wherefore comfort one another with these words."*

Those members together here in the Spirit, in teaching, in obedience, will be caught up together...

#### **2 Thessalonians 2:1**

*"Now we beseech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and by our gathering together unto Him, 2. That ye be not soon shaken in mind, or be troubled, neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letter as from us, as that the day of Christ [the Day of the LORD] is at hand."*

## THE CONCLUSION OF OUR MEDITATION ON "THE CHURCH OF GOD"

### SCRIPTURE READINGS

#### **Matthew 16:15 – 18**

*"He saith unto them, But whom say ye that I am? 16. And Simon Peter answered and said, Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God. 17. And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon Bar-jona: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but My Father which is in heaven. 18. And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this rock [Himself] I will build My church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it [the rock, Christ]."*

#### **Psalms 78:35**

*"And they remembered that God was their rock, and the high God their redeemer."*

#### **Psalms 95:1**

*"O come, let us sing unto the LORD: let us make a joyful noise to the rock of our salvation."*

#### **Galatians 1:6 – 9**

*"I marvel that ye are so soon removed from Him that called you into the grace of Christ unto another gospel: 7. Which is not another; but there be some that*

*trouble you, and would pervert the gospel of Christ. 8. But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel unto you than that which we have preached unto*

*you, let him be accursed. 9. As we said before, so say I now again, If any man preach any other gospel unto you than that ye have received, let him be accursed."*

### **Isaiah 28:9 – 16**

"Whom shall He teach knowledge? and whom shall He make to understand doctrine? them that are weaned from the milk, and drawn from the breasts. 10. For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little: 11. For with stammering lips and another tongue will He speak to this people. 12. To whom He said,

This is the rest wherewith ye may cause the weary to rest; and this is the refreshing: yet they would not hear. 13. But the word of the LORD was unto them precept upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little; that they might go, and fall backward, and be broken, and snared, and taken. 14. Wherefore hear the word of the LORD, ye scornful men, that rule

this people which is in Jerusalem. 15. Because ye have said, We have made a covenant with death, and with hell are we at agreement; when the overflowing scourge shall pass through, it shall not come unto us: for we have made lies our refuge, and under falsehood have we hid ourselves: 16. Therefore thus saith the Lord GOD, Behold, I lay in Zion for a foundation a stone, a tried stone, a precious corner stone, a sure foundation: he that believeth shall not make haste."

### **Ephesians 2:19 – 22**

"Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellowcitizens with the saints, and of the household of God; 20.

And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ Himself being the chief corner stone; 21. In whom all the

building fitly framed together growth unto an holy temple in the Lord: 22. In whom ye also are builded together for an habitation of God through the Spirit."

### **Acts 2:41**

"Then they that gladly received his [Peter's] word were baptized: and the same day there were added unto them about three thousand souls."

### **1 Thessalonians 1:2 – 6**

"We give thanks to God always for you all, making mention of you in our prayers; 3. Remembering without ceasing your work of faith, and labour of love, and patience of hope in our Lord

Jesus Christ, in the sight of God and our Father; 4. Knowing, brethren beloved, your election of God. 5. For our gospel came not unto you in word only, but also in power, and in the Holy Ghost, and

in much assurance; as ye know what manner of men we were among you for your sake. 6. And ye became followers of us, and of the Lord, having received the word in much affliction, with joy of the Holy Ghost."

### **James 5:9**

"Grudge not one against another, brethren, lest ye be condemned: behold, the judge standeth before the door."

### **Acts 17:11**

"These were more noble than those in Thessalonica, in that they received the word with all readiness of mind, and searched the scriptures daily, whether those things were so."

### Three Principles :

1. Every member must receive the preached Word gladly as from God.  
**The proof** of that is in doing what that Word from God tells us to do.
2. Every member must receive the preached Word with all readiness of mind as from God.  
**The proof** of that is that every member will search the Scriptures daily to confirm what God would have us to do.
3. Every member must receive the preached Word with the Joy of the Holy Spirit. That is, each member receives the Word with the happy confidence that Christ has spoken personally to each one.

If we abide by these **Three Principles** then we are building our local churches on **God's** Foundation, which is Jesus Christ - Crucified.

-0-0-0-0-0-0-0-0-0-0-

## Day 2 – Called Out By God

**1 Corinthians 1:2 – 3** "Unto the church of God which is at Corinth, to them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus, called to be saints, with all that in every place call upon the name of Jesus Christ our Lord, both theirs and ours: 3. Grace be unto you, and peace, from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ."

### A Body of People Responding to God's Call

**The Church** revealed in the Scriptures is a Body of people consisting only of those who have responded personally to God's Call which is made to all Mankind. It is a Call to come to God, to believe His Word, and to obey that Word.

It is a Call to the heart. It is a real Call by a real Person.

**Galatians 1:6** *"I marvel that ye are so soon removed from Him that called you into the grace of Christ unto another gospel."* The Book of **Acts** records how the Church was being formed this Way :

**Acts 4:4** *"Howbeit many of them which heard the word believed; and the number of the men was about five thousand."*

**vs31 – 32** *"And when they had prayed, the place was shaken where they were assembled together; and they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and they spake the word of God with boldness. 32. And the multitude of them that believed were of one heart and of one soul: neither said any of them that ought of the things which he possessed was his own; but they had all things common."*

**Acts 6:7** *"And the word of God increased; and the number of the disciples multiplied in Jerusalem greatly; and a great company of the priests were obedient to the faith."*

**Acts 11:1** *"And the apostles and brethren that were in Judaea heard that the Gentiles had also received the word of God."*

**vs17 – 18** *"Forasmuch then as God gave them the like gift as He did unto us, who believed on the Lord Jesus Christ; what was I, that I could withstand God? 18. When they heard these things, they held their peace, and glorified God, saying, Then hath God also to the Gentiles granted repentance unto life."*

We are never challenged by God. He calls us. The opportunity of Repentance shows that condemnation is far from God's mind.

**Acts 12:24** *"But the word of God grew and multiplied."*

**Acts 13:26** *"Men and brethren, children of the stock of Abraham, and whosoever among you feareth God, to you is the word of this salvation sent."*

**Acts 13:43**

*"Now when the congregation was broken up, many of the Jews and religious proselytes followed Paul and Barnabas: who, speaking to them, persuaded them to continue in the grace of God."*

**vs46 – 49**

*"Then Paul and Barnabas waxed bold, and said, It is necessary that the word of God should first have been spoken to you: but seeing ye put it from you, and judge yourselves unworthy of everlasting life, lo, we turn to the Gentiles. 47. For so hath the Lord commanded us, saying, I have set Thee to be a light of the Gentiles, that Thou shouldest be for salvation unto the ends of the earth. 48. And when the Gentiles heard this, they were glad, and glorified the word of the Lord: and as many as were ordained to eternal life believed. 49. And the word of the Lord was published throughout all the region."*

**Acts 19:17 – 20**

*"And this was known to all the Jews and Greeks also dwelling at Ephesus; and fear fell on them all, and the name of the Lord Jesus was magnified. 18. And many that believed came, and confessed, and shewed their deeds. 19. Many of them also which used curious arts brought their books together, and burned them before all men: and they counted the price of them, and found it fifty thousand pieces of silver. 20. So mightily grew the word of God and prevailed."*

The Call must be clear. Paul said in 1 Corinthians 14:8, "For if the trumpet give an uncertain sound, who shall prepare himself to the battle?" **CHRIST** is the Call of God; His drawing Power for all men. We are called out to listen to God's Word.

**A Body of People Called Out of Disobedience**

The Church of God is a Body of people called by God out of disobedience into obedience to His Word, as it is written :

**1 Peter 2:7 – 9**

*"Unto you therefore which believe He is precious: but unto them which be disobedient, the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner, 8. And a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence, even to them which stumble at the word, being disobedient: whereunto also they were appointed. 9. But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of Him who hath called you out of darkness into His marvellous light."*

We are called out of the darkness of disobedience to God's Word. The Lake of Fire is the place of Final Punishment for disobedience. It has no light of a flame, but it burns with brimstone.

*"chosen"*, meaning, accepted by God;

*"generation"*, meaning, those born into a certain Age, born into God's Kingdom in this generation of the Church Age.

**2 Corinthians 6:2**

*"(For He saith, I have heard Thee in a time accepted, and in the day of salvation have I succoured Thee: behold, now is the accepted time; behold, now is the day of salvation.)"*

– in a time accepted. Paul is quoting from :

**Isaiah 49:8**

*"Thus saith the LORD, In an accepted time have I heard Thee, and in a day of salvation have I helped Thee: and I will preserve Thee, and give Thee for a covenant of the people, to establish the earth, to cause to inherit the desolate heritages."* God heard

Christ's cry of agony...

*"priests", that is priests unto God;*

*"royal", because we are His children; because we have answered His Call;*

*"an holy nation", meaning, those who are in the Kingdom of God. In His Kingdom we are part of the Church, ruling with Him.*

*"peculiar", meaning, because we belong to God only; no one else can claim to own me, only God.*

**Colossians 3:11**

*"Where there is neither Greek nor Jew, circumcision, Barbarian, Scythian, bond nor free: but Christ is all, and in all." Neither ... nor ... but CHRIST!*

### A Body of People Called Out of Their Own Lives

The Church of God is a Body of people who are called out of their own lives into a Life of personal obedience to God's Word as it is written.

**1 Corinthians 1:9**

*"God is faithful, by whom ye were called unto the fellowship of His Son Jesus Christ our Lord."*

**Mark 14:21**

*"The Son of man indeed goeth, as it is written of Him: but woe to that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed! good were it for that man if he had never been born." **The***

**Lord Jesus said** that He, the Son of man, goes as it is written of Him. This also should be **my** statement.

**Hebrews 5:4 – 10**

*"And no man taketh this honour unto himself, but he that is called of God, as was Aaron. 5. So also Christ glorified Himself to be made an high priest; but He that said unto Him, Thou art My Son, to day have I begotten Thee. 6. As He saith also in another place, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec. 7. Who in the days of His flesh, when He had offered up prayers and supplications with strong crying and tears unto Him that was able to save Him from death, and was heard in that He feared; 8. Though He were a Son, yet learned He obedience by the things which He suffered; 9. And being made perfect, He became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey Him; 10. Called of God an high priest after the order of Melchisedec."*

All these words show us that I did not come to God without His calling me to Himself!!

**Hebrews 9:15**

*"And for this cause He is the mediator of the new testament, that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions that were under the first testament, they which are called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance."*

**Romans 8:15 – 17**

*"For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father. 16. The Spirit Himself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God: 17. And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with Him, that we may be also glorified together."*

**Colossians 1:24**

*"[I Paul]; Who now rejoice in my sufferings for you, and fill up that which is behind of the afflictions of Christ in my flesh for His body's sake, which is the church." Paul could now enjoy the victories that were gained by Christ through His afflictions – "and fill up that which is behind [that which was lacking – in his previous understanding/experience] of the afflictions of Christ".*

**Philippians 3:10** *“That I may know Him, and the power of His resurrection, and the fellowship of His sufferings, being made conformable unto His death.”* Paul is speaking about enjoying the victories of the Spirit over the flesh!

**1 Timothy 6:11 – 12** *“But thou, O man of God, flee these things; and follow after righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, meekness. 12. Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternal life, whereunto thou art also called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses.”* Paul exhorted Timothy to turn his back on the things of this world.

**1 Peter 1:15 – 16** *“But as He which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of conversation; 16. Because it is written, Be ye holy; for I am holy.”*

**Colossians 3:15** *“And let the peace of God rule in your hearts, to the which also ye are called in one body; and be ye thankful.”* Called to that condition of Life: **the Rule of His Peace.**

**1 Corinthians 1:26 – 28** *“For ye see your calling, brethren, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble, are called: 27. But God hath chosen the foolish things of the world to confound the wise; and God hath chosen the weak things of the world to confound the things which are mighty. 28. And base things of the world, and things which are despised, hath God chosen, yea, and things which are not, to bring to nought things that are.”* God has chosen me as without any of this world’s wisdom.

*“weak”, meaning, none of this world’s power or resources.*

*“And base things”, that is, we have nothing of this world’s authority.*

*“things which are despised”, that is, someone who is not respected by this world’s society or system.*

*“things which are not”, meaning, that God chooses me as someone who is considered as nothing in this world; not deserving or needing or is worthy of their love.*

**Philippians 3:13 – 14** *“Brethren, I count not myself to have apprehended: but this one thing I do, forgetting those things which are behind, and reaching forth unto those things which are before, 14. I press toward the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.”*

**Philippians 2:9 – 11** *“Wherefore God also hath highly exalted Him, and given Him a name which is above every name: 10. That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth; 11. And that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.”*

**1 Peter 5:10** *“But the God of all grace, who hath called us unto His eternal glory by Christ Jesus, after that ye have suffered a while, make you perfect, stablish, strengthen, settle you.”*

Those who are called by God **must** suffer in the flesh.

**1 Corinthians 7:17 – 22**

<i>“But as God hath distributed to every man, as the Lord hath called every one, so let him walk. And so ordain I in all churches. 18. Is any man called being circumcised? let him not become uncircumcised. Is any</i>	<i>called in uncircumcision? let him not be circumcised. 19. Circumcision is nothing, and uncircumcision is nothing, but the keeping of the commandments of God. 20. Let every man abide in the same calling wherein he was called.</i>	<i>21. Art thou called being a servant care not for it: but if thou mayest be made free, use it rather. 22. For he that is called in the Lord, being a servant, is the Lord’s freeman: likewise also he that is called, being free, is Christ’s servant.”</i>
--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------



**James 2:7**

*"Do not they blaspheme that worthy name by the which ye are called?"*

We are to have no respect to persons because of what they are; their position, etc, but because Christ is the Standard by which we live. It is an insult to God to build on one's own wealth or position. It is a blasphemy to vaunt my ability to look after myself. We can serve God better in the simple way – when we are not involved with this world.

**2 Corinthians 4:16 – 18**

*"For which cause we faint not; but though our outward man perish, yet the inward man is renewed day by day. 17. For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory; 18. While we look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen: for the things which are seen are temporal; but the things which are not seen are eternal."*

The afflictions of the flesh are not disastrous to us. It takes humility to look at the things that are not seen! The Lord Jesus said, "My kingdom is not of this world", John 18:36.

**Galatians 1:6**

*"I marvel that ye are so soon removed from Him that called you into the grace of Christ unto another gospel."* When I am in the Grace of Christ, then God can pour out all His blessings upon me.

### A Body of People Called Out of Their Society to a Common Obedience.

The Church of God is a Body of people who have been called out of their society into a common obedience to God's Written Word. Society is that body of people who follow a common set of rules.

**Ephesians 4:1 – 7**

*"I therefore, the prisoner of the Lord, beseech you that ye walk worthy of the vocation wherewith ye are called, 2. With all lowliness and meekness, with longsuffering, forbearing one another in love; 3. Endeavouring to keep the unity of the Spirit in the bond of peace. 4. There is one body, and one Spirit, even as ye are called in one hope of your calling; 5. One Lord, one faith, one baptism, 6. One God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in you all. 7. But unto every one of us is given grace according to the measure of the gift of Christ."*

*"One body, and one Spirit ... one hope ... one Lord, one faith, one baptism, one God and Father"* – the Church is knit together in God's Society; a common bond, a common obedience to His Word as it is written.

*"The unity of the Spirit"* – the same Vision, the same View of God's Written Word as the Holy Spirit has. If I do not hold God's Spirit's View then I am not in God's Society. **2 Peter 1:20** says, "Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation." The Church of God is a Society of people with the same Value which God's Spirit has of God's Word.

**Hebrews 3:7 – 10**

*"Wherefore (as the Holy Ghost saith, To day if ye will hear His voice, 8. Harden not your hearts, as in the provocation, in the day of temptation in the wilderness: 9. When your fathers tempted Me, proved Me, and saw My works forty years. 10. Wherefore I was grieved with that generation, and said, They do alway err in their heart; and they have not known My ways."*

Instant obedience is the rule not the exception.

**1 Peter 3:8 – 9**

*“Finally, be ye all of one mind, having compassion one of another, love as brethren, be pitiful, be courteous: 9. Not rendering evil for evil. Or railing for railing: but contrariwise blessing; knowing that ye are thereunto called, that ye should inherit a blessing.”*

– “Be ye all of **one mind**”; “having **compassion**” – of Christ, which is a necessity in order to meet a need.

## The Church of God Is That Body of People Called Into A Special Relationship With God

**1 John 3:1 – 3**

*“Behold, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God: therefore the world knoweth us not, because it knew Him not. 2. Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when He shall appear, we shall be like Him; for we shall see Him as He is. 3. And every man that hath this hope in Him purifieth himself, even as He is pure.”*

We are called out of human relationships. The relationship of our Heavenly Father has the greater claim on our time and attention.

**2 Thessalonians 2:13 – 14**

*“But we are bound to give thanks always to God for you, brethren beloved of the Lord, because God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth: 14. Whereunto He called you by our gospel, to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ.”*

We are called and separated unto God by His Spirit and His Word.

**Ephesians 1:15 – 18**

*“Wherefore I also, after I heard of your faith in the Lord Jesus, and love unto all the saints, 16. Cease not to give thanks for you, making mention of you in my prayers; 17. That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of Him: 18. The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that ye may know what is the hope of His calling, and what the riches of the glory of His inheritance in the saints.”*

The Church has a special Position, different and separate from everything else. It is the Body of Christ.

**Revelation 19:9**

*“And he [one of the seven angels] said unto me, Write, Blessed are they which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he saith unto me, These are the true sayings of God.”*

**Ephesians 5:23 – 33**

*“For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the church: and He is the saviour of the body. 24. Therefore as the church is subject unto Christ, so let the wives be to their own husband in every thing. 25. Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave Himself for it; 26. That He might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word, 27. That He might present it to Himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish. 28. So ought men to love their wives as their own bodies. He that loveth his wife loveth himself. 29. For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourisheth and cherisheth it, even as the Lord the church: 30. For we are members of His body, of His flesh, and of His bones. 31. For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh. 32. This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the church. 33. Nevertheless let every one of you in particular so love his wife even as himself; and the wife see that she reverence her husband.”*

This is the relationship of love – the Bride of the Lamb. There will be an Official Ceremony of the joining together of Christ and His Church!

**2 Thessalonians 1:11 – 12** *"Wherefore also we pray always for you, that our God would count you worthy of this calling, and fulfil all the good pleasure of His goodness, and the work of faith with power: 12. That the name of our Lord Jesus Christ may be glorified in you, and ye in Him, according to the grace of our God and the Lord Jesus Christ."* It is God's "good pleasure" for the Church to be ruling and reigning with Christ when He comes back to the earth.

**Revelation 17:14** *"These shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: for He is Lord of lords, and King of kings: and they that are with Him are called, and chosen, and faithful."* This is really the history of the Church – "with Him" and "called". God's Call came to us. We are "chosen" because we accept the Call in Jesus Christ. I cannot be chosen of God outside of Christ.

### The Special Relationship of Saints to God

A saint is someone who is sacred in God's sight; someone who is pure; someone who is blameless; someone who is consecrated to God and someone most holy to God. It is a tremendous Position to be in because of Christ. The bread at the Lord's Supper and the "meat offering" [fine flour] in *Leviticus 2:1 – 11* represents the Risen Christ as food for His people, made available because of the pouring out of His Blood for sin.

The following are almost all the references to "saints" in the first six letters of Paul to the churches :

**1 Corinthians 1:2** *"Unto the church of God which is at Corinth, to them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus, called to be saints, with all that in every place call upon the name of Jesus Christ our Lord, both theirs and ours."*

**Romans 1:7** *"To all that be in Rome, beloved of God, called to be saints: Grace to you and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ."*

**Romans 8:27** *"And He that searcheth the hearts knoweth what is the mind of the Spirit, because He maketh intercession for the saints according to the will of God."*

**Romans 12:13** *"Distributing to the necessity of saints; given to hospitality."*

**Romans 16:2** *"That ye receive her [Phebe] in the Lord, as becometh saints, and that ye assist her in whatsoever business she hath need of you: for she hath been a succourer of many, and of myself also."*

**1 Corinthians 6:1 – 3** *"Dare any of you, having a matter against another, go to law before the unjust, and not before the saints? 2. Do ye not know that the saints shall judge the world? and if the world shall be judged by you, are ye unworthy to judge the smallest matters? 3. Know ye not that we shall judge angels? how much more things that pertain to this life?"*

**1 Corinthians 14:33** *"For God is not the author of confusion, but of peace, as in all churches of the saints."*

**1 Corinthians 16:1** *"Now concerning the collection for the saints, as I have given order to the churches of Galatia, even so do ye."*

- Ephesians 1:18** *"The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that ye may know what is the hope of His calling, and what the riches of the glory of His inheritance in the saints."*
- Ephesians 2:19** *"Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellowcitizens with the saints, and of the household of God."*
- Ephesians 3:8** *"Unto me, who am less than the least of all saints, is this grace given, that I should preach among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ."*
- Ephesians 3:17 – 19** *"That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith; that ye, being rooted and grounded in love, 18. May be able to comprehend with all saints what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height; 19. And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with all the fulness of God."*
- Ephesians 4:11 – 12** *"And He gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; 12. For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ."*
- Ephesians 5:3 – 4** *"But fornication, and all uncleanness, or covetousness, let it not be once named among you, as becometh saints; 4. Neither filthiness, nor foolish talking, nor jesting, which are not convenient: but rather giving of thanks."*
- Ephesians 6:18** *"Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints."*
- Philippians 1:1** *"Paul and Timotheus, the servants of Jesus Christ, to all the saints in Christ Jesus which are at Philippi, with the bishops and deacons."*

#### **Colossians 1:1 – 4**

*"Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, and Timotheus our brother, 2. To the saints and faithful brethren in Christ which are at Colosse: Grace be unto you, and peace, from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ. 3. We give thanks to God and the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, praying always for you, 4. Since we heard of your faith in Christ Jesus, and of the love which ye have to all the saints."*

#### **Psalms 149:1 – 9**

*"Praise ye the LORD. Sing unto the LORD a new song, and His praise in the congregation of saints. 2. Let Israel rejoice in Him that made him: let the children of Zion be joyful in their King. 3. Let them praise His name in the dance: let them sing praises unto Him with the timbrel and harp. 4. For the LORD taketh pleasure in His people: He will beautify the meek with salvation. 5. Let the saints be joyful in glory: let them sing aloud upon their beds. 6. Let the high praises of God be in their mouth, and a twoedged sword in their hand; 7. To execute vengeance upon the heathen, and punishments upon the people; 8. To bind their kings with chains, and their nobles with fetters of iron; 9. To execute upon them the judgment written: this honour have all His saints. Praise ye the LORD."*

To be unconscious of myself and of other people, I **must** then be conscious of **Christ**, and of **His** loveliness.

In our conversation, in the behaviour of our children, in our way of dress, and in our homes, we can reveal whether we live for Christ or the world.

**1 Timothy 3:15 – 16**

*"But if I tarry long, that thou mayest know how thou oughtest to behave thyself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth. 16. And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifest in the flesh, justified in the Spirit, seen of angels, preached unto the Gentiles, believed on in the world, received up into glory."*

**1 Corinthians 1:26 – 27**

*"For ye see your calling, brethren, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble, are called: 27. But God hath chosen the foolish things of the world to confound the wise; and God hath chosen the weak things of the world to confound the things which are mighty."*

**Nothing** of this world is in God's Call. A Christian is one without this world's wisdom. The wisdom of God is **the right answer** – God's Answer and not the world's answer.

*"the foolish things"* – a "fool" is one who does not reckon with God. And a fool to the world is one who does not reckon with the world's ways! I should desire always to seek the Lord...

## THE CONCLUSION OF OUR MEDITATION ON "CALLED OUT BY GOD"

**1. We must be rid of worldliness from our fellowships and churches.**

**Matthew 6:32 – 33**

*"(For after all these things do the Gentiles seek:) for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things. 33. But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and His righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you."*

**Matthew 6:19 – 21**

*"Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal: 20. But lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal: 21. For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also."*

The fear of being without these things causes us to allow the things into our lives.

The Lord said *"added unto you"*. They will not come first if they come from God! If your treasure is in God's Kingdom, you will press for those things in His Kingdom.

**2. The Church is a called out Body; called out by God to achieve God's interests. Therefore we have to see that we must be of one accord.**

**Philippians 2:1 – 13**

*"If there be therefore..."* continued on p.22.

**Philippians 2:1 – 13**

*"If there be therefore any consolation in Christ, if any comfort of love, if any fellowship of the Spirit, if any bowels and mercies, 2. Fulfil ye my joy, that ye be likeminded, having the same love, being of one accord, of one mind. 3. Let nothing be done through strife or vain-glory; but in lowliness of mind let each esteem other better than themselves. 4. Look not every*

*man on his own things, but every man also on the things of others. 5. Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus: 6. Who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God: 7. But made Himself of no reputation, and took upon Him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men: 8. And being found in fashion*

*as a man, He humbled Himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross. 9. Wherefore God also hath highly exalted Him, and given Him a name which is above every name: 10. That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth; 11. And that every tongue should confess*

*that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father. 12. Wherefore, my beloved, as ye have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling. 13. For it is God which worketh in you both to will and to do of His good pleasure."*

Christ did what God asked Him to do; therefore I should do what God asks me to do.

**3. To do all these things, each local church must be a praying church.**

**Luke 22:40**

*"And when He was at the place, He said unto them, Pray that ye enter not into temptation."*

**Luke 22:46**

*"And said unto them, Why sleep ye? rise and pray, lest ye enter into temptation."*

We must pray so that God will be able to get us out of the trouble when it comes. The flesh is weak, so therein is the reason for our praying. Every time God asks me to do something helps me to crucify the flesh.

-O-O-O-O-O-O-O-O-O-O-

## Day 3 – Conceived By God

**Ephesians 1:3 – 6** "Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ: **4.** According as He hath chosen us in Him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before Him in love: **5.** Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to Himself, according to the good pleasure of His will, **6.** To the praise of the glory of His grace, wherein He hath made us accepted in the beloved."

### 1. God Always Desired A Church

God the Father always desired a Church, that is, a body of people to gather around Him, all of whom have given to Him their hearts. This was in His heart throughout Eternity. This group of people gathered around Him would act upon His Word as obedient children.

**Psalm 50:4 – 5** *"He shall call to the heavens from above, and to the earth, that He may judge His people. 5. Gather My saints together unto Me; those that have made a covenant with Me by sacrifice."*

**Psalm 89:5 – 7** *"And the heavens shall praise Thy wonders, O LORD: Thy faithfulness also in the congregation of the saints. 6. For who in the heaven can be compared unto the LORD? who among the sons of the mighty can be likened unto the LORD? 7. God is greatly to be feared in the assembly of the saints, and to be had in reverence of all them that are about Him." He longed for that kind of gathering; children, in His Presence!*

**Psalm 40:9 – 10** *"I have preached righteousness in the great congregation: lo, I have not refrained My lips, O LORD, Thou knowest. 10. I have not hid Thy righteousness within My heart; I have declared Thy faithfulness and Thy salvation: I have not concealed Thy lovingkindness and Thy truth from the great congregation."*

**Psalm 35:18** *"I will give Thee thanks in the great congregation: I will praise Thee among much people."*

#### **Psalm 22:22 – 25**

<i>"I will declare Thy name unto My brethren: in the midst of the congregation will I praise Thee. 23. Ye that fear the LORD, praise Him; all ye</i>	<i>the seed of Jacob, glorify Him; and fear Him, all ye the seed of Israel. 24. For He hath not despised nor abhorred the affliction of the afflicted; neither hath He hid His</i>	<i>face from Him; but when He cried unto Him, He heard. 25. My praise shall be of Thee in the great congregation: I will pay My vows before them that fear Him."</i>
------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------

**Psalm 132:9** *"Let Thy priests be clothed with righteousness; and let Thy saints shout for joy."*

**Isaiah 40:10 – 11** *"Behold, the Lord GOD will come with strong hand, and His arm shall rule for Him: behold, His reward is with Him, and His work before Him. 11. He shall feed His flock like a shepherd: He shall gather the lambs with His arm, and carry them in His bosom, and shall gently lead those that are with young." His concept of His Family is that*

of a joyous group; sheer joy at being in His Presence. Christ will be in His element! It was Christ's idea to give God His heart's desire of children who will love Him.

**Psalm 68:5 – 6**

*“A father of the fatherless, and a judge of the widows, is God in His holy habitation. 6. God setteth the solitary in families: He bringeth out those which are bound with chains: but the rebellious dwell in a dry land.”*

– a “*dry land*”; there is no water in Hell; no Word of God there. He relieves those that are bound; the children of God are free.

**Psalm 107:41**

*“Yet setteth He the poor on high from affliction, and maketh Him families like a flock.”*

God accepts that His Family will look to Him gladly for their every need.

**Hebrews 2:5 – 10**

*“For unto the angels hath He not put in subjection the world to come, whereof we speak. 6. But one in a certain place testified, saying, What is man, that Thou art mindful of him? or the son of man, that Thou visitest him? 7. Thou madest him a little lower than the angels; Thou crowdest him with glory and honour, and didst set him over the works of Thy hands: 8. Thou hast put all things in subjection under his feet. For in that He put all in subjection under him, He left nothing that is not put under him. But now we see not yet all things put under him. 9. But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honour; that He by the grace of God should taste death for every man. 10. For it became Him, for whom are all things, and by whom are all things, in bringing many sons unto glory, to make the captain of their salvation perfect through sufferings.”*

– questions asked by the Holy Ghost. “Made lower than the angels”, meaning, made of flesh.

**Deuteronomy 4:10**

*“Specially the day that thou stoodest before the LORD thy God in Horeb, when the LORD said unto me, Gather Me the people together, and I will make them hear My words, that they may learn to fear Me all the days that they shall live upon the earth, and that they may teach their children.”*

**Numbers 20:8**

*“Take the rod, and gather thou the assembly together, thou, and Aaron thy brother, and speak ye unto the rock before their eyes; and it shall give forth his water, and thou shalt bring forth to them water out of the rock: so thou shalt give the congregation and their beasts drink.” In a crisis, He said, ‘Gather the Family together’.*

**Isaiah 54:7**

*“For a small moment have I forsaken thee; but with great mercies will I gather thee.”*

All through the Scriptures, through the Holy Ghost, we can see God’s great longing to gather children around Him to love Him.

**Jeremiah 29:12 – 14**

*“Then shall ye call upon Me, and ye shall go and pray unto Me, and I will hearken unto you. 13. And ye shall seek Me, and find Me, when ye shall search for Me with all your heart. 14. And I will be found of you, saith the LORD: and I will turn away your captivity, and I will gather you from all the nations, and from all the places whither I have driven you, saith the LORD; and I will bring you again into the place whence I caused you to be carried away captive.”*

This is the Call from the One Who would be a Father, and the One we now know to be a Father. “[A]ll your heart” – without reservation.



**Jeremiah 31:10** *"Hear the word of the LORD, O ye nations, and declare it in the isles afar off, and say, He that scattered Israel will gather him, and keep him, as a shepherd doth his flock."*

The Church was always in His heart, so the concept of a **gathered** people was always there.

**Luke 13:34** *"O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killest the prophets, and stonest them that are sent un-to thee; how often would I have gathered thy children together, as a hen doth gather her brood under her wings, and ye would not!"* Sin separates, drives away, kills and scatters, but Love speaks. "[W]ings" are the symbol of the protective Love of God. He would gather His own unto Himself.

**Micah 4:6** *"In that day, saith the LORD, will I assemble her that halteth, and I will gather her that is driven out, and her that I have afflicted."*

**Zephaniah 3:18 – 19** *"I will gather them that are sorrowful for the solemn assembly, who are of thee, to whom the reproach of it was a burden. 19. Behold, at that time I will undo all that afflict thee: and I will save her that halteth, and gather her that was driven out; and I will get them praise and fame in every land where they have been put to shame."* The conception of the Church contained **a Message of healing** – to the lonely, the sick, and the sorrowful. The Church should proclaim the health of God.

**John 11:51 – 52** *"And this spake he not of himself: but being high priest that year, he prophesied that Jesus should die for that nation; 52. And not for that nation only, but that also He should gather together in one the children of God that were scattered abroad."*

**1 Thessalonians 4:17** *"Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord."*

**2 Thessalonians 2:1 – 2** *"Now we beseech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and by our gathering together unto Him, 2. That ye be not soon shaken in mind, or be troubled, neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letter as from us, as that the day of Christ is at hand."* All the members moved by the same Spirit will think the same thing.

**Isaiah 14:12 – 15**

<i>"How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which did weaken the nations! 13.</i>	<i>For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the</i>	<i>north: 14. I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High. 15. Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit."</i>
------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------

The "stars of God" are the angels. This is a picture of Satan's ambition. He saw God surrounded with hosts of loving angels with God reigning in loving supremacy. Sin did weaken the nations, **v12**. "[I]nto heaven" – that is where Home is, and Satan aimed for that, **v13**. If Satan had had love in his heart and had humbled himself he might have been welcomed, but pride has no place There, and that pride immediately causes unrest in the congregation.

## 2. God's Plan Was Born

Out of God's desire for a Church the Plan was born into His mind.

**Acts 17:22 – 31**

*"Then Paul stood in the midst of Mars' hill, and said, Ye men of Athens, I perceive that in all things ye are too superstitious. 23. For as I passed by, and beheld your devotions, I found an altar with this inscription, TO THE UNKNOWN GOD. Whom therefore ye ignorantly worship, Him declare I unto you. 24. God that made the world and all things therein, seeing that He is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth*

*not in temples made with hands; 25. Neither is worshipped with men's hands, as though He needed any thing, seeing He giveth to all life, and breath, and all things; 26. And hath made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation; 27. That they should seek the Lord, if haply they might feel after Him, and find Him, though He be not far from every one of us: 28. For in Him we live, and move, and have our being;*

*as certain also of your own poets have said, For we are also His offspring. 29. Forasmuch then as we are the offspring of God, we ought not to think that the Godhead is like unto gold, or silver, or stone, graven by art and man's device. 30. And the times of this ignorance God winked at; but now commanded all men every where to repent: 31. Because He hath appointed a day, in the which He will judge the world in righteousness by that man whom He hath ordained; whereof He hath given assurance unto all men, in that He hath raised Him from the dead."*

These are the tender revelations of **God's Plan**. He has finished with putting up with men thinking of Him as someone far removed from them, **v30**.

**v31**

*"Because He hath appointed a day ..."* God will judge the world in righteousness as He has appointed Christ as the Judge, therefore God raised Christ up from the dead as the First-born of the Family because men ought to look upon God as their **Father**.

**v22**

*"[S]uperstitious"* from the context means one who wants God but doesn't know where to go to find Him.

**Romans 1:18 – 21**

*"For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness; 19. Because that which may be*

*known of God is manifest in them; for God hath shewed it unto them. 20. For the invisible things of Him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even His*

*eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse: 21. Because that, when they knew God, they glorified Him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened."*

We were made to look to Him, and until I find Him I will not be satisfied, for He is my **Father**.

**Ephesians 3:14 – 21**

*"For this cause I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, 15. Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named, 16. That He would grant you, according to the riches of His glory, to be strengthened with*

*might by His Spirit in the inner man; 17. That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith; that ye, being rooted and grounded in love, 18. May be able to comprehend with all saints what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height; 19. And to know the love of Christ,*

*which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with all the fulness of God. 20. Now unto Him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us, 21. Unto Him be glory in the church by Christ Jesus throughout all ages, world without end. Amen."*

God is my **Father**; my **Provider**. We are to comprehend the thing that holds God's Family together, and that is the Love of Christ! **v18**.

**1 John 3:1 – 3**

*"Behold, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God: therefore the world knoweth us not, because it knew Him not. 2. Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when He shall appear, we shall be like Him; for we shall see Him as He is. 3. And every man that hath this hope in Him purifieth himself, even as He is pure."*

This excludes those who don't want Love and includes all who do want Him.

**3. God Had A Pattern For His Family**

God, having conceived the Plan, worked out the Pattern for His Family.

***Ephesians 1:3 – 12***

*"Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ: 4. According as He hath chosen us in Him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before Him in love: 5. Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to Himself, according to the good pleasure of His will, 6. To the praise of the glory of His grace, wherein He hath made us accepted in the beloved. 7. In whom we have redemption through His blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of His grace; 8. Wherein He hath abounded toward us in all wisdom and prudence; 9. Having made known unto us the mystery of His will, according to His good pleasure which He hath purposed in Himself: 10. That in the dispensation of the fulness of times He might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth; even in Him: 11. In whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of Him who worketh all things after the counsel of His own will: 12. That we should be to the praise of His glory, who first trusted in Christ."*

Our Father brings us by Jesus Christ *"to Himself"*, v5; compare *Exodus 20:5*, where God said He is a **Jealous** God. He has not called me to be anyone's child, but His own.

***Romans 8:28 – 30***

*"And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to His purpose. 29. For whom He did foreknow, He also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of His Son, that He might be the first-born among many brethren. 30. Moreover whom He did predestinate, them He also called: and whom He called, them He also justified: and whom He justified, them He also glorified."* He decided beforehand the Pattern for the Church; it was to be

like His Son. It was to be a very close relationship.

***Ephesians 2:10***

*"For we are His workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them." "[G]ood" – like God.*

**1 Peter 1:17 – 20**

*"And if ye call on the Father, ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation received by tradition from your fathers; 19. But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot: 20. Who verily was foreordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times for you."*

Christ is the type of Person that God wants; God wants His Family to operate as Jesus does.

**Proverbs 8:22 – 36**

*"The LORD possessed Me in the beginning of His way, before His works of old. 23. I was set up from everlasting, from the beginning, or ever the earth was. 24. When there were no depths, I was brought forth; when there were no fountains abounding with water. 25. Before the mountains were settled, before the hills was I brought forth: 26. While as yet He had not made the earth, nor the fields, nor*

*the highest part of the dust of the world. 27. When He prepared the heavens, I was there: when He set a compass upon the face of the depth: 28. When He established the clouds above: when He strengthened the fountains of the deep: 29. When He gave to the sea His decree, that the waters should not pass His commandment: when He appointed the foundations of the earth: 30. Then I was by Him, as one brought up with Him: and I was daily His delight, rejoicing always before*

*Him; 31. Rejoicing in the habitable part of His earth; and My delights were with the sons of men. 32. Now therefore hearken unto Me, O ye children: for blessed are they that keep My ways. 33. Hear instruction, and be wise, and refuse it not. 34. Blessed is the man that heareth Me, watching daily at My gates, waiting at the posts of My doors. 35. For whoso findeth Me findeth life, and shall obtain favour of the LORD. 36. But he that sinneth against Me wrongeth his own soul: all they that hate Me love death."*

There is no wrong in God being possessive, *v22!* He wants His Family with Him and He wants them to want to be with Him. God's Family was in His heart. Out of His having His Son with Him, He conceived the Plan for His Family.

Here is the Pattern – JESUS, Someone filled with enthusiastic Joy to be with God and with His Family!

**John 1:1 – 4**

*"In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. 2. The same was in the beginning with God. 3. All things were made by Him; and without Him was not any thing made that was made. 4. In Him was life; and the life was the light of men."* God communicates by Word of mouth. He doesn't need to

communicate any other way. Christ said, *"out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh"* [Matthew 12:34]. Out of God's heart, full of Joy and Love, He communicates through His Son to the Church. He has shown that man, sinless and sinful can only live with Him by Love shown by obedience to Him.

**Genesis 1:26 – 28**

*"And God said, Let Us make man in Our image, after Our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth. 27. So God created man in His own image, in the image of God created He him; male and female created He them. 28. And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth."*

**Genesis 2:7 – 25 (vs7 – 14, vs 15 – 25 p29)**

*"And the LORD God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul. 8. And the LORD God planted a garden eastward in Eden; and there He put the man whom He had formed. 9. And out of the ground made the*

*LORD God to grow every tree that is pleasant to the sight, and good for food; the tree of life also in the midst of the garden, and the tree of knowledge of good and evil. 10. And a river went out of Eden to water the garden; and from thence it was parted, and became into four heads. 11. The name of the first is Pison: that is it which compasseth the*

*whole land of Havilah, where there is gold; 12. And the gold of that land is good: there is bdellium and the onyx stone. 13. And the name of the second river is Gihon: the same is it that compasseth the whole land of Ethiopia. 14. And the name of the third river is Hiddekel: that is it which goeth toward the east of Assyria. And the fourth river is Euphrates.*

15. And the LORD God took the man, and put him into the garden of Eden to dress it and to keep it. 16. And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, Of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat: 17. But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die. 18. And the LORD God said, It is not good that the man should be alone; I will make him an help meet for him. 19. And out of the ground the LORD God formed every beast of the field, and every fowl of the air; and brought them unto Adam to see what he would call them: and whatsoever Adam called every living creature, that was the name thereof. 20. And Adam gave names to all cattle, and to the fowl of the air, and to every beast of the field; but for Adam there was not found an help meet for him. 21. And the LORD God caused a deep sleep to fall upon Adam and he slept: and He took one of his ribs, and closed up the flesh instead thereof; 22. And the rib, which the LORD God had taken from man, made He a woman, and brought her unto the man. 23. And Adam said, This is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man. 24. Therefore shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh. 25. And they were both naked, the man and his wife, and were not ashamed."

This is the concept of the Family : Made like Him; made in the Image of God. "[A] living soul", v7 – God's revelation of someone who could be His child. The Garden was a place provided, fit for His children to live in, with an occupation provided – they were given something constructive to do; and guidance was also provided. The Father must give His children proper guidance on how to live properly with Him. First Adam, then Eve was produced as another member of the Family to share the same Love, the same protection, and the same rules.

#### 4. God Determined to Achieve His Purpose

God, having conceived the Pattern, He determined to achieve His Purpose.

In *Genesis*, the Plan was broken, not because of the Father's fault. The Father was perfect, but the perfect children broke the Rules of the Household. But God had started a Family and He would get a Family!, so determining to do that meant He would have to pay the Price...

**Genesis 3:14 – 15**      *"And the LORD God said unto the serpent, Because thou hast done this, thou art cursed above all cattle, and above every beast of the field; upon thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life: 15. And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise His heel."* God said to the serpent – the one without Love – 'you are cursed because of what you have done'. Satan was condemned in that one moment, through God's great grief, to the worst punishment : on his belly in the Lake of Fire. At that one moment, God determined that what He had decided would be done; for in His heart was born the Cross and the means to achieve it. He would have His Family, but there was a Cost involved – "thou shalt bruise His heel"...

**Revelation 13:8**      *"And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him [the man with Satan in him], whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world."*

**Revelation 17:8**      *"The beast that thou sawest was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is."*

"[T]he book of life": God determined He would have a Register with His Family's names written in it. "[F]rom the foundation of the world" – the founding of the world's system on disobedience and unbelief.

[The way to understand *v8* is by considering that the beast that "was" was the beast John first saw in **Chapter 13**; "and is not" – the beast, the man, is not this beast, Satan, the beast in the Vision before him, which shall "ascend out of the bottomless pit" **Chapter 20:1 – 3**; "and yet is", indeed is the man, the Anti-christ.]

### **Revelation 12:1 – 17**

"And there appeared a great wonder in heaven; a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars: 2. And she being with child cried, travailing in birth, and pained to be delivered. 3. And there appeared another wonder in heaven; and behold a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads. 4. And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born. 5. And she brought

forth a man child, who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron: and her child was caught up unto God, and to His throne. 6. And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred and threescore days. 7. And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels, 8. And prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven. 9. And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him. 10. And I heard a loud voice

saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of His Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night. 11. And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death. 12. Therefore rejoice, ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them. Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time. 13. And when the dragon saw that he was cast unto the earth, he persecuted the woman which brought forth the man child. 14. And to the woman

were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness, into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time, from the face of the serpent. 15. And the serpent cast out of his mouth water as a flood after the woman, that he might cause her to be carried away of the flood. 16. And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed up the flood which the dragon cast out of his mouth. 17. And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make war with the remnant of her seed, which keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ."

This **Chapter 12** has a link with **Genesis 3:15**. The woman, *vs1 – 5*, is the Nation of Israel, from Abraham, Isaac and Jacob. The woman, *vs6 – 17*, is the Remnant of Israel which will be saved in those end times. God is determined to cast out of the universe hate and covetousness and selfishness...

### **Genesis 22:7 – 8**

"And Isaac spake unto Abraham his father, and said, My father: and he said, Here am I, my son. And he said,

Behold the fire and the wood: but where is the lamb for a burnt offering? 8. And Abraham said, My son, God will provide Himself a

lamb for a burnt offering: so they went both of them together."

### Genesis 22:15 – 18

"And the angel of the LORD called unto Abraham out of heaven the second time, 16. And said, By Myself have I sworn, saith the LORD, for because thou hast done this thing, and hast not withheld thy son, thine only son: 17. That in blessing I will bless thee, and in multiplying I will multiply thy seed as the stars of the heaven, and as the sand which is upon the sea shore; and thy seed shall possess the gate of His enemies; 18. And in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed; because thou hast obeyed My voice."

What was missing, God would provide! **Obedience** would produce the Family. The Family must be run by a Father who would be obeyed.

### Galatians 3:7 – 29

"Know ye therefore that they which are of faith the same are the children of Abraham. 8. And the scripture, foreseeing that God would justify the heathen through faith, preached before the gospel unto Abraham, saying, In thee shall all nations be blessed. 9. So then they which be of faith are blessed with faithful Abraham. 10. For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them. 11. But that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, it is evident: for, The just shall live by faith. 12. And the law is not of faith: but, The man that doeth them shall live in them. 13. Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree: 14. That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ; that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith. 15. Brethren, I speak after the manner of men; Though it be but a man's covenant, yet if it be confirmed, no man disannulleth, or addeth thereto. 16. Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ. 17. And this I say, that the covenant, that was confirmed before of God in Christ, the law, which was four hundred and thirty years after, cannot disannul, that it should make the promise of none effect. 18. For if the inheritance be of the law, it is no more of promise: but God gave it to Abraham by promise. 19. Wherefore then serveth the law? It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come to whom the promise was made; and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator. 20. Now a mediator is not a mediator of one, but God is one. 21. Is the law then against the promises of God? God forbid: for if there had been a law given which could have given life, verily righteousness should have been by the law. 22. But the scripture hath concluded all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe. 23. But before faith came, we were kept under the law, shut up unto the faith which should afterwards be revealed. 24. Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith. 25. But after that faith is come, we are no longer under a schoolmaster. 26. For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus. 27. For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ. 28. There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus. 29. And if ye be Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise."

"Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ", **v16**. Through the Love that God has for Christ, the Holy Ghost shows us the Love of God for us, His Family. **Romans 5:1** says, "Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ". Only by the Holy Ghost can I understand God's Passion to have me in His Family.

**Romans 5:1 – 21**

*"Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ: 2. By whom also we have access by faith into this grace wherein we stand, and rejoice in hope of the glory of God. 3. And not only so, but we glory in tribulations also: knowing that tribulation worketh patience; 4. And patience, experience; and experience, hope: 5. And hope maketh not ashamed; because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us. 6. For when we were yet without strength, in due time Christ died for the ungodly. 7. For scarcely for a righteous man will one die: yet peradventure for a good man some would even dare to die. 8. But God commendeth His love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us. 9. Much more then, being now justified by His blood, we shall be saved from wrath through Him. 10. For if, when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of His Son, much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved by His life. 11. And not only so, but we also joy in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we have now received the atonement. 12. Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned: 13. (For until the law sin was in the world: but sin is not imputed when there is no law. 14. Nevertheless death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over them that had not sinned after the similitude of Adam's transgression, who is the figure of Him that was to come. 15. But not as the offence, so also is the free gift. For if through the offence of one many be dead, much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, which is by one man, Jesus Christ, hath abounded unto many. 16. And not as it was by one that sinned, so is the gift: for the judgment was by one to condemnation, but the free gift is of many offences unto justification. 17. For if by one man's offence death reigned by one; much more they which receive abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness shall reign in life by one, Jesus Christ.) 18. Therefore as by the offence of one judgment came upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life. 19. For as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous. 20. Moreover the law entered, that the offence might abound. But where sin abounded, grace did much more abound: 21. That as sin hath reigned unto death, even so might grace reign through righteousness unto eternal life by Jesus Christ our Lord."*

Through the Love that God has for Christ, the Holy Ghost shows us the Love of God for us, His Family. Only by the Holy Ghost can I understand God's Passion to have me in His Family.

**Isaiah 7:13 – 14**

*"And he [Isaiah] said, Hear ye now, O house of David; Is it a small thing for you to weary men, but will ye weary my God also? 14. Therefore the Lord Himself shall give you a sign; Behold, a virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel."*

God was going to show us the Pattern of that Family, and His Name shall be called Emanuel!  
[Matthew 1:23]

**Isaiah 9:6**

*"For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon His shoulder: and His name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace."*

**Isaiah 32:1 – 3**

*"Behold, a king shall reign in righteousness, and princes shall rule in judgment. 2. And a man shall be as an hiding place from the wind, and a covert from the tempest; as rivers of water in a dry place, as the shadow of a great rock in a weary land. 3. And the eyes of them that see shall not be dim, and the ears of them that hear shall hearken."*



**Isaiah 61:1 – 3**

*"The Spirit of the Lord GOD is upon Me; because the LORD hath anointed Me to preach good tidings unto the meek; He hath sent Me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound; 2. To proclaim the acceptable year of the LORD, and the day of vengeance of our God; to comfort all that mourn; 3. To appoint unto them that mourn in Zion, to give unto them beauty for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning, the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness; that they might be called trees of righteousness, the planting of the LORD, that He might be glorified."*

v1 - the "meek", those who want God; the "brokenhearted", those mourning for the sin of the world.

**Psalms 45:1 – 17**

*"My heart is inditing a good matter; I speak of the things which I have made touching the king: My tongue is the pen of a ready writer. 2. Thou art fairer than the children of men: grace is poured into Thy lips: therefore God hath blessed Thee for ever. 3. Gird Thy sword upon Thy thigh, O most mighty, with Thy glory and Thy majesty. 4. And in Thy majesty ride prosperously because of truth and meekness and righteousness; and Thy right hand shall teach Thee terrible things. 5. Thine arrows are sharp in the heart of the king's enemies; whereby the people fall under Thee. 6. Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever: the sceptre of Thy kingdom is a right sceptre. 7. Thou lovest righteousness, and hatest wickedness: therefore God, Thy God, hath anointed Thee with the oil of gladness above Thy fellows. 8. All Thy garments smell of myrrh, and aloes, and cassia, out of the ivory palaces, whereby they have made Thee glad. 9. Kings' daughters were among Thy honourable women: upon Thy right hand did stand the queen in gold of Ophir. 10. Hearken, O daughter, and consider, and incline thine ear; forget also thine own people, and thy father's house; 11. So shall the king greatly desire thy beauty: for He is thy Lord; and worship thou Him. 12. And the daughter of Tyre shall be there with a gift; even the rich among the people shall intreat thy favour. 13. The king's daughter is all glorious within: her clothing is of wrought gold. 14. She shall be brought unto the king in raiment of needlework: the virgins her companions that follow her shall be brought unto Thee. 15. With gladness and rejoicing shall they be brought: they shall enter into the king's palace. 16. Instead of Thy fathers shall be Thy children, whom Thou mayest make princes in all the earth. 17. I will make Thy name to be remembered in all generations: therefore shall the people praise Thee for ever and ever."*

God's determination to do what was needed to be done. "myrrh", v8 – a reminder of the Cross.

**Isaiah 45:8**

*"Drop down, ye heavens, from above, and let the skies pour down righteousness: let the earth open, and let them bring forth salvation, and let righteousness spring up together; I the LORD have created it."*

**Isaiah 42:1 – 7**

*"Behold, My servant, whom I uphold; Mine elect, in whom My soul delighteth; I have put My Spirit upon Him: He shall bring forth judgment to the Gentiles. 2. He shall not cry, nor lift up, nor cause His voice to be heard in the street. 3. A bruised reed shall He not break, and the smoking flax shall He not quench: He shall bring forth judgment unto the truth. 4. He shall not fail nor be discouraged, till He have set judgment in the earth: and the isles shall wait for His law. 5. Thus saith God the LORD, He that created the heavens, and stretched them out; He that spread forth the earth, and that which cometh out of it; He that giveth breath unto the people upon it, and spirit to them that walk therein: 6. I the LORD have called Thee in righteousness, and will hold Thine hand, and will keep Thee, and give Thee for a covenant of the people, for a light of the Gentiles; 7. To open the blind eyes, to bring out the prisoners from the prison, and them that sit in darkness out of the prison house."*

## A Father in Heaven

The Cross expresses God's firm resolve : 'I will have a Family'. The Cross is the perfect Revelation of the Family of God : it shows **the discipline of Love, the absence of sin, and the consideration of Someone else.**

**Matthew 12:18**

*"Behold My servant, whom I have chosen; My beloved, in whom My soul is well pleased: I will put My Spirit upon Him, and He shall shew judgment to the Gentiles."*

**Psalms 23:1**

*"The LORD is My shepherd; I shall not want."* I [also] should never be in want or to feel a need to go outside of the Father's Love. Christ Crucified is my Guarantee that what God says He will do for me, He will do.

**John 17:5 – 26**

*"And now, O Father, glorify Thou Me with Thine own self with the glory which I had with Thee before the world was. 6. I have manifested Thy name unto the men which Thou gavest Me out of the world: Thine they were, and Thou gavest them Me; and they have kept Thy word. 7. Now they have known that all things whatsoever Thou hast given Me are of Thee. 8. For I have given them the words which Thou gavest Me; and they have received them, and have known surely that I came out from Thee, and they have believed that Thou didst send Me. 9. I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but for them which Thou hast given Me; for they are Thine. 10. And all Mine are Thine, and Thine are Mine; and I am glorified in them. 11 And now I am no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to Thee. Holy*

*Father, keep through Thine own name those whom Thou hast given Me, that they may be one, as We are. 12. While I was with them in the world, I kept them in Thy name: those that Thou gavest Me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled. 13. And now come I to Thee; and these things I speak in the world, that they might have My joy fulfilled in themselves. 14. I have given them Thy word; and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. 15. I pray not that Thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that Thou shouldest keep them from the evil. 16. They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. 17. Sanctify them through Thy truth: Thy word is truth. 18. As Thou hast sent Me into the world, even so have I also sent them into the world. 19. And for their sakes I sanctify Myself, that they also might be sanctified through the truth. 20. Neither pray I for these alone, but*

*for them also which shall believe on Me through their word; 21. That they all may be one; as Thou, Father, art in Me, and I in Thee, that they also may be one in Us: that the world may believe that Thou hast sent Me. 22. And the glory which Thou gavest Me I have given them; that they may be one, even as We are one: 23. I in them, and Thou in Me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that Thou hast sent Me, and hast loved them, as Thou hast loved Me. 24. Father, I will that they also, whom Thou hast given Me, be with Me where I am; that they may behold My glory, which Thou hast given Me: for Thou lovest Me before the foundation of the world. 25. O righteous Father, the world hath not known Thee: but I have known Thee, and these have known that Thou hast sent Me. 26. And I have declared unto them Thy name, and will declare it: that the love wherewith Thou hast loved Me may be in them, and I in them."*

God's House must be filled, and there will be plenty of room in the Holy City!

**Psalm 110:1 – 7**

*"The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit Thou at My right hand, until I make Thine enemies Thy footstool. 2. The LORD shall send the rod of Thy strength out of Zion: rule Thou in the midst of Thine enemies. 3. Thy people shall be willing in the day of Thy power, in the beauties of holiness from the womb of the morning: Thou hast the dew of Thy youth. 4. The LORD hath sworn, and will not repent, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchizedek. 5. The Lord at Thy right hand shall strike through kings in the day of His wrath. 6. He shall judge among the heathen, He shall fill the places with the dead bodies; He shall wound the heads over many countries. 7. He shall drink of the brook in the way: therefore shall He lift up the head."*

This prophecy concerning Christ shows God's determination to achieve His Purpose for a Family.

**v2** *"The LORD shall send the rod of Thy strength out of Zion: rule Thou in the midst of Thine enemies."* – in His terrible state of disfigurement from His sufferings.

**v3** *"Thy people shall be willing in the day of Thy power, in the beauties of holiness from the womb of the morning: thou hast the dew of Thy youth."*

*"the beauties of holiness"* : the essence and expression of Love is obedience.

*"the womb of the morning"* : out of the same Source that the morning was created, so will come God's Family! Praise God for Jesus Christ our Lord!

**v4** *"The LORD hath sworn, and will not repent, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchizedek."*

*"a priest for ever"* : there is always a link for us to get to God. He has given us a Person in addition to His Word, to be more readily accepted.

**v1** *"Sit Thou at My right hand."* These are the New Testament references for that :

**Matthew 22:41 – 46**

*"While the Pharisees were gathered together, Jesus asked them, 42. Saying, What think ye of Christ? whose son is He? They say unto Him, The Son of David. 43. He saith unto them, How then doth David in Spirit call Him Lord, saying, 44. The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit Thou on My right hand, till I make Thine enemies Thy footstool? 45. If David then call Him Lord, how is He his son? 46. And no man was able to answer Him a word, neither durst any man from that day forth ask Him any more questions."*

**Acts 2:33 – 36**

*"Therefore being by the right hand of God exalted, and having received of the Father the promise of the Holy Ghost, He hath shed forth this, which ye now see and hear. 34. For David is not ascended into the heavens: but he saith himself, The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit Thou on My right hand, 35. Until I make Thy foes Thy footstool. 36. Therefore let all the house of Israel know assuredly, that God hath made that same Jesus, whom ye have crucified, both Lord and Christ."*

**Hebrews 1:13** *"But to which of the angels said He at any time, sit on My right hand, until I make Thine enemies Thy footstool?"*

**Hebrews 10:12 – 13** *"But this man, after He had offered one sacrifice for sins for ever, sat down on the right hand of God; 13. From henceforth expecting till His enemies be made His footstool."*

All these reveal His determination; His Plan to have a Family.

### A Priest Forever

**v4 (Psalm 110)** *"a priest for ever."* These are the references in the **Book of Hebrews** :

**Hebrews 5:6** *"As He saith also in another place, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec."*

**Hebrews 6:19 – 20** *"Which hope we have as an anchor of the soul, both sure and stedfast, and which entereth into that within the veil; 20. Whither the forerunner is for us entered, even Jesus, made an high priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec."*

**Hebrews 7:15 – 17** *"And it is yet far more evident: for that after the similitude of Melchisedec there ariseth another priest, 16. Who is made, not after the law of a carnal commandment, but after the power of an endless life. 17. For He testifieth, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec."*

**Hebrews 7:21** *"(For those priests were made without an oath; but this with an oath by Him that said unto Him, The Lord sware and will not repent, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec:)"*

We need Someone through Whom we can be in touch with God forever.

### **Psalm 2:1 – 7**

<i>"Why do the heathen rage, and the people imagine a vain thing? 2. The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against the LORD, and</i>	<i>against His Anointed, saying, 3. Let us break Their bands asunder, and cast away Their cords from us. 4. He that sitteth in the heavens shall laugh: the LORD shall have them in derision. 5. Then shall He</i>	<i>speak unto them in His wrath, and vex them in His sore displeasure. 6. Yet have I set My king upon My holy hill of Zion. 7. I will declare the decree: the LORD hath said unto Me, Thou art My Son; this day have I begotten Thee."</i>
-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------

**Acts 13:33** *"God hath fulfilled the same unto us their children, in that He hath raised up Jesus again; as it is also written in the second psalm, Thou art My Son, this day have I begotten Thee."*

**Hebrews 1:5** *"For unto which of the angels said He at any time, Thou art My Son, this day have I begotten Thee? And again, I will be to Him a Father, and He shall be to Me a Son?"*

**Hebrews 5:5** *"So also Christ glorified not Himself to be made an high priest; but He that said unto Him, Thou art My Son, to day have I begotten Thee."*

### Hebrews 2:6 – 12

"But one in a certain place testified, saying, What is man, that Thou art mindful of him? or the son of man, that Thou visitest him? 7. Thou madest him a little lower than the angels; thou crownest him with glory and honour, and didst set him over the works of Thy hands: 8. Thou hast put all things in subjection under his feet.

For in that He put all in subjection under him, He left nothing that is not put under him. But now we see not yet all things put under him. 9. But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honour; that He by the grace of God should taste death for every man. 10. For it became Him, for whom are all things, and by whom are all things, in bringing

many sons unto glory, to make the captain of their salvation perfect through sufferings. 11. For both He that sanctifieth and they who are sanctified are all of one: for which cause He is not ashamed to call them brethren, 12. Saying, I will declare Thy name unto My brethren, in the midst of the church will I sing praise unto Thee."

God's great Declaration: "Thou art My Son, this day have I begotten Thee"; the Pattern. "For it became Him", *v10*, meaning, it suited God to give Christ up for me. It is just like Him; it is just the thing He would do! ... Don't we sing:

*'Oh, it's just like Him to take my sins away, To make me glad and free, To keep me day by day;*

*Oh it's just like Him to give His Life for me, That I might go to Heaven, and ever with Him be'!*

Christ is the Captain, the Leader; the part in the steps which God took to make His Family.

### Ephesians 1:6

*"To the praise of the glory of His grace, wherein He hath made us accepted in the Beloved."* We are "accepted", because it is "in the Beloved". I can be in God's

Family only on one condition, that I resemble His Son. Through the Cross, He can reveal that Character; the Nature of God, which is humility, and a lowly heart; loving conversation, without distrust, or suspicion – a happy Family!

## THE CONCLUSION OF OUR MEDITATION ON "CONCEIVED BY GOD"

### 1. With regard to our relationships to our earthly parents:

#### Luke 9:59 – 62

"And He said unto another, Follow Me. But he said, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father. 60. Jesus said unto him, Let the dead bury their

dead: but go thou and preach the kingdom of God. 61. And another also said, Lord, I will follow Thee; but let me first go bid them farewell, which are at

home at my house. 62. And Jesus said unto him, No man, having put his hand to the plough, and looking back, is fit for the kingdom of God."

It is not necessary to consider our parents' views when they are unregenerate.

#### Luke 14:25 – 26

*"And there went great multitudes with Him: and He turned, and said unto them, 26. If any man come to Me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be My disciple."* Christ

was saying, 'If you prefer any of that on the list to Me, then you cannot be My disciple'.

## 2. With regard to our aims, objectives or ends :

As members of the Church of God we must not seek our own objectives, or ends, but the ends, Will and wishes of Christ our Head, as revealed in God's Written Word.

**Galatians 2:20**

*"I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave Himself for me."*

-O-O-O-O-O-O-O-O-O-O-O-

## Day 4 – Concealed By God

**Ephesians 3:4 – 5** "Whereby, when ye read, ye may understand my knowledge in the mystery of Christ) 5. Which in other ages was not made known unto the sons of men, as it is now revealed unto His holy apostles and prophets by the Spirit."

### A Divine Secret

The Church of God was kept a Divine Secret by God from before the foundation of the world.

**Ephesians 1:4 – 5** "According as He hath chosen us in Him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before Him in love: 5. Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to Himself, according to the good pleasure of His will." Before the world was brought into being, our Destiny in Christ had been decided by God. It had been kept a Divine Secret from man from the beginning.

### **Ephesians 1:9 – 12**

"Having made known unto us the mystery of His will, according to His good pleasure which He hath purposed in Himself: 10. That in the dispensation of the fulness of times He might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth; even in Him: 11. In whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of Him who worketh all things after the counsel of His own will: 12. That we should be to the praise of His glory, who first trusted in Christ."

### **Romans 16:25 – 26**

"Now to Him that is of power to stablish you according to my gospel, and the preaching of Jesus Christ, according to the revelation of the mystery, which was kept secret since the world began, 26. But now is made manifest, and by the scriptures of the prophets, according to the commandment of the everlasting God, made known to all nations for the obedience of faith."

"[M]ystery" – that which the mouth is shut upon. It was a silence imposed by God. God kept this Desire, this longed-for Plan and Purpose. It was a Secret kept hidden. It didn't not exist; it was there but it was not known.

A secret is something known to someone but not to someone else. The Secret was concealed, kept hidden, from men, angels and devils. It was kept private and no one could tell what God had in His mind until He revealed it.

Remember that nothing that God has for me to know, of any of God's mystery, will be made known except by God's Spirit. Unless I keep this in mind, my seeking for an answer and my questions will only produce fruitless discussions.

God's Word is a closed Book except it is revealed by God's Spirit. And so with God's Church; He was silent about His Desire and Plan to have one to delight His heart of Love. It was a Plan born out of Love and carried out by Love, but God's Spirit did not make it known.

**Colossians 1:24 – 29**

*"Who now rejoice in my sufferings for you, and fill up that which is behind of the afflictions of Christ in my flesh for His body's sake, which is the church: 25. Whereof I am made a minister, according to the dispensation of God which is given to me for you, to fulfil the word of God; 26. Even the mystery which hath been hid from ages and from generations, but now is made manifest to His saints: 27. To whom God would make known what is the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles; which is Christ in you, the hope of glory: 28. Whom we preach, warning every man, and teaching every man in all wisdom; that we may present every man perfect in Christ Jesus: 29. Whereunto I also labour, striving according to His working, which worketh in me mightily."*

The mystery hidden by God : the Prophets writings contained the Mystery but **the Spirit did not give the Revelation**. When God desires to reveal it and to whom, it will be made known. Age upon Age passed by and the Mystery of the Church remained a mystery. It does show how important it was to God.

When it is not helpful for us to talk about something, we keep silent, not to be deceitful, but for a good motive – and our hearts are deceitful and we are sinners... But with God, who is meek in heart and without guile, He knew that His Plan could only be effected if He kept silent. This Mystery, God's Plan for a Church, which was already in His mind but not known to men, therefore prevented men from having a full revelation of the Person of God – and God allowed it to be so.

Now the Church can say, *"And of His fulness have all we received, and grace for grace. For the law was given by Moses, but grace and truth came by Jesus Christ" [John 1:16 – 17].* Until God opened His mouth there was an impenetrable silence which no one could break through.

**Job 11:5 – 7**

*"But oh that God would speak, and open His lips against thee; 6. And that He would shew thee the secrets of wisdom, that they are double to that which is! Know therefore that God exacteth of thee less than thine iniquity deserveth. 7. Canst thou by searching find out God? canst thou find out the Almighty unto perfection?"* These are only

parts truths. We cannot search out God; we find Him only when and because He reveals Himself to us.

**Job 15:8**

*"Hast thou heard the secret of God? and dost thou restrain wisdom to thyself."* The

answer is : NO!

**Job 29:1 – 4**

*"Moreover Job continued his parable, and said, 2. Oh that I were as in months past, as in the days when God preserved me; 3. When His candle shined upon my head, and when by His light I walked through darkness; 4. As I was in the days of my youth, when the secret of God was upon my tabernacle."*

Job's idea of the secret of God was when everything was going well for him. He didn't know the Secret of the Grace of God for all man's sin.

**Job 9:28 – 35**

*"I am afraid of all my sorrows, I know that Thou wilt not hold me innocent. 29. If I be wicked, why then labour I in vain? 30. If I wash myself with snow water, and make my hands never so clean; 31. Yet shalt Thou plunge me in the ditch, and mine own clothes shall abhor me. 32. For He is not a man, as I am, that I should answer Him, and we should come together in judgment. 33. Neither is there any daysman betwixt us, that might lay His hand upon us both. 34. Let Him take His rod away from me, and let not His fear terrify me: 35. Then would I speak, and not fear Him; but it is not so with me."*



We can grope for God all our lives, but unless He says, 'Here I am', we will not find Him. In Job's groping for God, he touched some half-truths. Today, in a Christian's dark hours they say the Heavens are as brass – as it says in *Deuteronomy 28:23* – but that is not so any longer. It is good at those times to have the knowledge that Job did not have. We do have a Daysman between us forever and ever!

**2 Corinthians 4:18**

*"While we look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen: for the things which are seen are temporal; but the things which are not seen are eternal."* It is the things which are not seen that are the eternal things. Are we in

ignorance in any matter? Without the Spirit of God we may as well not go to the Scriptures for an answer, as we would be going to them with a preconceived idea of our need.

**Job 16:16 – 22**

*"My face is foul with weeping, and on my eyelids is the shadow of death; 17. Not for any injustice in mine hands: also my prayer is pure. 18. O earth, cover not thou my blood, and let my cry have no place. 19. Also now, behold, my witness is in heaven, and my record is on high. 20. My friends scorn me: but mine eye poureth out tears unto God. 21. O that one might plead for a man with God, as a man pleadeth for his neighbour! 22. When a few years are come, then I shall go the way whence I shall not return."*

There was Someone pleading for Job, but he didn't know it. We do know it, for He is now the Man at God's Right Hand – but do we act differently from Job? Without the Spirit of God we will not.

**Psalms 25:14**

*"The secret of the LORD is with them that fear Him; and He will shew them His covenant."* He will show them His Grace, but they do not know how it is working;

they cannot tell the exact extent and scope of that Grace! God did deal with men, as with Cornelius [Acts 10 & 11] by protecting and saving them, but it was still a secret in the way it was working and why.

There is no secret about our protection today. Those in the Church are quite clear that the Blood of Christ has put every sin out of God's sight and they have the fullness of the Holy Ghost to prove that Heaven is open to them and they are waiting for the literal sound of the Trumpet!! Men did not know that then.

**Psalms 91:1**

*"He that dwelleth in the secret place of the most High shall abide under the shadow of the Almighty."* This is a reference to Jesus Christ. He knew the Secret, because

He was the instrument in bringing that secret passion and Plan of God's to pass! He would abide under the shadow of the Almighty – **the shadow of the Cross**; of the Call to die for the sins of men; of obedience. The Secret of the LORD was kept in His silence! What a remarkable thing for God who wants to talk to men! *"In the beginning was the Word"*, says John 1:1.

**Psalms 139:13 – 18**

*"For Thou hast possessed My reins: Thou hast covered Me in My mother's womb. 14. I will praise Thee; for I am fearfully and wonderfully made: marvellous are Thy works; and that My soul knoweth right well. 15. My substance was not hid from Thee, when I was made in secret, and curiously wrought in the lowest parts of the earth. 16. Thine eyes did see My substance, yet being unperfect; and in Thy book all My members were written, which in continuance were fashioned, when as yet there was none of them. 17. How precious also are Thy thoughts unto Me, O God! how great is the sum of them! 18. If I should count them, they are more in number than the sand: when I awake, I am still with Thee."*

Christ was conceived by the Holy Ghost. It is remarkable that the Creator was made flesh! This was part of the Secret. God's Plan was worked out secretly. *Hebrews 10:5* says, "[A] body hast Thou prepared Me"...

**Isaiah 40:12 – 31**

“Who hath measured the waters in the hollow of His hand, and meted out heaven with the span, and comprehended the dust of the earth in a measure, and weighed the mountains in scales, and the hills in a balance? 13. Who hath directed the Spirit of the LORD, or being His counsellor hath taught Him? 14. With whom took He counsel, and who instructed Him, and taught Him in the path of judgment, and taught Him knowledge, and shewed to Him the way of understanding? 15. Behold, the nations are as a drop of a bucket, and are counted as the small dust of the balance: behold, He taketh up the isles as a very little thing. 16. And Lebanon is not sufficient to burn, nor the beasts thereof sufficient for a burnt offering. 17. All nations before Him are as nothing; and they are counted to Him less than nothing, and vanity. 18. To whom then will ye liken God? or what likeness will ye compare unto Him? 19. The workman melteth a graven image, and the goldsmith spreadeth it over with gold, and casteth silver chains. 20. He that is so impoverished that he hath no oblation chooseth a tree that will not rot; he seeketh unto him a cunning workman to prepare a graven image, that shall not be moved. 21. Have ye not known? have ye not heard? hath it not been told you from the beginning? have ye not understood from the foundations of the earth? 22. It is He that sitteth upon the circle of the earth, and the inhabitants thereof are as grasshoppers; that stretcheth out the heavens as a curtain, and spreadeth them out as a tent to dwell in: 23. That bringeth the princes to nothing; He maketh the judges of the earth as vanity. 24. Yea, they shall not be planted; yea, they shall not be sown: yea, their stock shall not take root in the earth: and He shall also blow upon them, and they shall wither, and the whirlwind shall take them away as stubble. 25. To whom then will ye liken Me, or shall I be equal? saith the Holy One. 26. Lift up your eyes on high, and behold who hath created these things, that bringeth out their host by number: He calleth them all by names by the greatness of His might, for that He is strong in power; not one faileth. 27. Why sayest thou, O Jacob, and speakest, O Israel, My way is hid from the LORD, and my judgment is passed over from my God? 28. Hast thou not known? hast thou not heard, that the everlasting God, the LORD, the Creator of the ends of the earth, fainteth not, neither is weary? there is no searching of His understanding. 29. He giveth power to the faint; and to them that have no might He increaseth strength. 30. Even the youths shall faint and be weary, and the young men shall utterly fall: 31. But they that wait upon the LORD shall renew their strength; they shall mount up with wings as eagles; they shall run, and not be weary; and they shall walk, and not faint.”

“**Who**” refers to Jesus Christ. The “**LORD**” means JEHOVAH – God in covenant with His people. They didn’t know the full revelation that the Person who was dealing with them was the Creator and the One who was represented by those millions of slain beasts. Christ directed the Spirit of the LORD and yet on earth He was controlled by that Spirit!

**v18** “To whom then will ye liken God? or what likeness will ye compare unto Him?” He is asking, ‘What is He like, you people?’ He is like God! In it all, the mystery of Who God was, and doing it this way, was unknown to them. God was supreme, then why these sacrifices, and this wandering in the wilderness, and the tabernacle built?? – “[T]he law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ” [Galatians 3:24] – God was teaching them.

God was only silent about the Church, to hide the revelation of it, but otherwise He did not stop communicating with them.

**Psalms 37:34**

“Wait on the LORD, and keep His way, and He shall exalt Thee to inherit the land: when the wicked are cut off, Thou shalt see it.”

**Jeremiah 29:13**

*"And ye shall seek Me, and find Me, when ye shall search for Me with all your heart."*

If your heart is going after God [as Christ's was] you will take His dealings with you as right [as Christ did]. Not even His Prophets or His angels knew God's Mystery.

**1 Peter 1:3 – 12**

*"Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which according to His abundant mercy hath begotten us again unto a lively hope by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, 4. To an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you, 5. Who are kept by the power of God through faith unto salvation ready to be revealed in the last time. 6. Wherein ye greatly rejoice, though now for a season, if need*

*be, ye are in heaviness through manifold temptations: 7. That the trial of your faith, being much more precious than of gold that perisheth, though it be tried with fire, might be found unto praise and honour and glory at the appearing of Jesus Christ: 8. Whom having not seen, ye love; in whom, though now ye see Him not, yet believing, ye rejoice with joy unspeakable and full of glory: 9. Receiving the end of your faith, even the salvation of your souls. 10. Of which salvation the prophets*

*have enquired and searched diligently, who prophesied of the grace that should come unto you: 11. Searching what, or what manner of time the Spirit of Christ which was in them did signify, when He testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ, and the glory that should follow. 12. Unto whom it was revealed, that not unto themselves, but unto us they did minister the things, which are now reported unto you by them that have preached the gospel unto you with the Holy Ghost sent down from heaven; which things the angels desire to look into."*

This is the Mystery revealed by the Spirit. See their humility and understanding of God to know what He said was right and yet knowing that something was missing it did not stop them from preaching God's Word. The angels didn't know because God kept silent. Some people in the churches act as though God is silent, because they do not take God's Word by the Spirit.

**Deuteronomy 29:29**

*"The secret things belong unto the LORD our God: but those things which are revealed belong unto us and to our children for ever, that we may do all the words of this law."*

The secret things are God's, but those revealed belong to us! If I ask for a further revelation from God while not doing what He has already revealed, I won't get any further. This is my job that I may do all the words of this law. God will give me another revelation – line upon line. There is pride in everyone and it is only by humility that we may deal with and benefit from God.

**Daniel 2:28 – 29**

*"But there is a God in heaven that revealeth secrets, and maketh known to the king Nebuchadnezzar what shall be in the latter days. Thy dream, and the visions of thy head upon thy bed, are these; 29. As for thee, O king, thy thoughts came into thy mind upon thy bed, what should come to pass hereafter: and He that revealeth secrets maketh known to thee what shall come to pass."*

God reveals His secrets for specific purposes, and not to puff us up. Here, people were prevented from being murdered for not revealing to the king the interpretation of his dream.

**Ecclesiastes 12:13 – 14**

*"Let us hear the conclusion of the whole matter: Fear God, and keep His commandments: for this is the whole duty of man. 14. For God shall bring every work into judgment, with every secret thing, whether it be good, or whether it be evil."*

**Romans 2:16**

*"In the day when God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ according to my gospel." God only reveals secrets, being that which is otherwise unknown to men.*

**Luke 8:17**

*"For nothing is secret, that shall not be made manifest; neither any thing hid, that shall not be known and come abroad."*

Daniel could not understand what was going to happen to his people, but he did not dispute with God; he went on his knees before God.

**Matthew 13:10 – 17**

*"And the disciples came, and said unto Him, Why speakest Thou unto them in parables? 11. He answered and said unto them, Because it is given unto you to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given. 12. For whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have more abundance: but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that he hath. 13. Therefore speak I to them in parables: because they seeing see not; and hearing they hear not, neither do they understand. 14. And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of Esaias, which saith, By hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceive: 15. For this people's heart is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have closed; lest at any time they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and should understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them. 16. But blessed are your eyes, for they see: and your ears, for they hear. 17. For verily I say unto you, That many prophets and righteous men have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them; and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them."*

**The Silence Broken**

This long silence of God's about His Church was broken when **the Holy Spirit was poured out on all flesh**.

**Acts 2:14**

*"But Peter, standing up with the eleven, lifted up his voice, and said unto them, Ye men of Judaea, and all ye that dwell at Jerusalem, be this known unto you, and hearken to my words:"* Peter spoke with complete authority by the Holy Ghost. Peter

unfolded the secret...

The Secret of God has been revealed to show us our High Calling. It requires specialised treatment, using the Holy Spirit, the apostles, the teachers and pastors through whom He called us to live eternal lives.

God's deep passion was to have a Family, and this Mystery was made apparent only when Christ was revealed by the Holy Ghost in this way – as both the Foundation of all our lives and the Chosen Head of this Church. The Man crucified was the Foundation and the appointed Head of the Church's future Destiny.

At this Revelation was God's Mystery revealed, and the silence was broken! When God tore the curtain apart, it was like saying after one opens a door, 'Come in; see all that is behind the door'.

Our intelligence will not grasp God's Word. Satan's high intelligence cannot grasp God. God is too fast, too slow, too high, too low for Satan; he is frustrated, he can't understand the way God works!

### **Ephesians 3:1 – 12**

*"For this cause I Paul, the prisoner of Jesus Christ for you Gentiles, 2. If ye have heard of the dispensation of the grace of God which is given me to you-ward: 3. How that by revelation He made known unto me the mystery; (as I wrote afore in few words, 4. Whereby, when ye read, ye may understand my knowledge in the mystery of Christ) 5. Which in other ages was not made known unto the sons of men, as it is now revealed*

*unto His holy apostles and prophets by the Spirit; 6. That the Gentiles should be fellowheirs, and of the same body, and partakers of His promise in Christ by the gospel: 7. Whereof I was made a minister, according to the gift of the grace of God given unto me by the effectual working of His power. 8. Unto me, who am less than the least of all saints, is this grace given, that I should preach among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ; 9.*

*And to make all men see what is the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the world hath been hid in God, who created all things by Jesus Christ: 10. To the intent that now unto the principalities and powers in heavenly places might be known by the church the manifold wisdom of God, 11. According to the eternal purpose which He purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord: 12. In whom we have boldness and access with confidence by the faith of Him."*

Christ was a mystery until God revealed His Place and His Position. Christ, not the Jewish nation, was the Revelation of God. Christ was the Person to look to in order to know God, not the Jew, but to come with the Jew.

### **Colossians 1:26 – 29**

*"Even the mystery which hath been hid from ages and from generations, but now is made manifest to His saints: 27. To whom God would make known*

*what is the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles; which is Christ in you, the hope of glory: 28. Whom we preach, warning every man, and teaching*

*every man in all wisdom; that we may present every man perfect in Christ Jesus: 29. Whereunto I also labour, striving according to His working, which worketh in me mightily."*

The Jews thought that they were the oracles of God; the Revelation. It was hard for them to take that Christ was the Revelation; not Christ only in the Jews or Gentiles, but for all the world. Christ – in the midst of the people; in a man's heart; in a man's life!

### **Ephesians 1:9**

*"Having made known unto us the mystery of His will, according to His good pleasure which He hath purposed in Himself."*

God's own Purpose, His own Plan, was not according to man's needs. Christ is all in all. Anything that God wants can easily be found done in Christ! We must know that Christ shows us the things we need to know! Wherever I am, Christ can be in me!

God laid the Foundation and set up the Head, and the Holy Ghost proceeded to build. Christ is God's attraction. If we want to know God, we must know Christ; if we want to know how lovely God is, how limitless His Love is, we must know Christ. God and the Holy Spirit know no other way for us!

### **Romans 16:26 – 27**

*"But now is made manifest, and by the scriptures of the prophets, according to the commandment of the everlasting God, made known to all nations for the obedience of faith: 27. To God only wise, be glory through Jesus Christ for ever. Amen."* This

mystery is revealed through God's Word as it is written only – through the Scriptures of the Prophets who didn't know the Mystery. They wrote by the Spirit of God, not by their own reckoning. Only by this way could the Revelation be made known to all men.

**Romans 11:22 – 36**

*"Behold therefore the goodness and severity of God: on them which fell, severity; but toward thee, goodness, if thou continue in His goodness: otherwise thou also shalt be cut off. 23. And they also, if they abide not still in unbelief, shall be grafted in: for God is able to graff them in again. 24. For if thou were cut out of the olive tree which is wild by nature, and wert grafted contrary to nature into a good olive tree: how much more shall these, which be the natural branches, be grafted into their own olive tree? 25. For I would not, brethren, that ye should be*

*ignorant of this mystery, lest ye should be wise in your own conceits; that blindness in part is happened to Israel, until the fulness of the Gentiles be come in. 26. And so all Israel shall be saved: as it is written, There shall come out of Sion the Deliverer, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob: 27. For this is My covenant unto them, when I shall take away their sins. 28. As concerning the gospel, they are enemies for your sakes: but as touching the election, they are beloved for the fathers' sakes. 29. For the gifts and calling of God are without repentance. 30. For as ye in times past have not believed God,*

*yet have now obtained mercy through their unbelief: 31. Even so have these also now not believed, that through your mercy they also may obtain mercy. 32. For God hath concluded them all in unbelief, that He might have mercy upon all. 33. O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! how unsearchable are His judgments, and His ways past finding out! 34. For who hath known the mind of the Lord? or who hath been His counsellor? 35. Or who hath first given to Him, and it shall be recompensed unto Him again? 36. For of Him, and through Him, and to Him, are all things: to whom be glory for ever. Amen."*

The Mercy of God is the cause of the Revelation of this Mystery. We are recipients of God's Mercy. Mercy is the action of Love... It is the Mercy of God that covers all traces of our sin. In the parable of the Pharisee and the publican in *Luke 18:9 – 14*, the publican would not lift up his eyes to Heaven not because he was afraid of God but because he was guilty and ashamed. So he prayed, "God be merciful to me a sinner", *v13*, and he got God's Mercy.

In every one of the twenty-six verses of *Psalms 136*, it says, "for His mercy endureth for ever". Mercy outlasts all things! Not one of us is wonderful; not one of us is anything, except by the Grace of God. All of us have sinned; therefore all of us have God's Mercy. Only by the Spirit of God are His Judgments and His Ways not unsearchable.

**Ephesians 6:19 – 20**

*"And for me, that utterance may be given unto me, that I may open my mouth boldly, to make known the mystery of the gospel, 20. For which I am an ambassador in bonds: that therein I may speak boldly, as I ought to speak."*

**Colossians 4:3 – 4**

*"Withal praying also for us, that God would open unto us a door of utterance, to speak the mystery of Christ, for which I am also in bonds: 4. That I may make it manifest, as I ought to speak." We must make this Mystery known!*

**Colossians 2:1 – 4**

*"For I would that ye knew what great conflict I have for you, and for them at Laodicea, and for as many as have not seen my face in the flesh; 2. That their hearts*

*might be comforted, being knit together in love, and unto all riches of the full assurance of understanding, to the acknowledgement of the mystery of God, and of the*

*Father, and of Christ; 3. In whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge. 4. And this I say, lest any man should beguile you with enticing words."*

**1 Timothy 3:16**

*"And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifest in the flesh, justified in the Spirit, seen of angels, preached unto the Gentiles, believed on in the world, received up into glory."*

## Revelation 10:7

*"But in the days of the voice of the seventh angel, when he shall begin to sound, the mystery of God should be finished, as He hath declared to His servants the prophets."*

## Hebrews 1:1 – 12

*"God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets, 2. Hath in these last days spoken unto us by His Son, whom He hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also He made the worlds; 3. Who being the brightness of His glory, and the express image of His person, and upholding all things by the word of His power, when He had by Himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high; 4. Being made so much better than the angels,*

*as He hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they. 5. For unto which of the angels said He at any time, Thou art My Son, this day have I begotten Thee? And again, I will be to Him a Father, and He shall be to Me a Son? 6. And again, when He bringeth in the firstbegotten into the world, He saith, And let all the angels of God worship Him. 7. And of the angels He saith, Who maketh His angels spirits, and His ministers a flame of fire. 8. But unto the Son He saith, Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever: a*

*sceptre of righteousness is the sceptre of Thy kingdom. 9. Thou hast loved righteousness, and hated iniquity; therefore God, even Thy God, hath anointed Thee with the oil of gladness above Thy fellows. 10. And, Thou, Lord, in the beginning hast laid the foundation of the earth; and the heavens are the works of Thine hands: 11. They shall perish; but Thou remainest; and they all shall wax old as doth a garment; 12. And as a vesture shalt Thou fold them up, and they shall be changed: but Thou art the same, and Thy years shall not fail."*

Jesus Christ Crucified in His marred Body today, is ***the Full Revelation of God*** to any and to all men. **No other source of revelation is available** to me – and the Spirit of God knows no other!

## 1 John 3:16

*"Hereby perceive we the love of God, because He laid down His life for us: and we ought to lay down our lives for the brethren."*

## Galatians 2:17 – 21

*"But if, while we seek to be justified by Christ, we ourselves also are found sinners, is therefore Christ the minister of sin? God forbid. 18. For if I build again the things which I*

*destroyed, I make myself a transgressor. 19. For I through the law am dead to the law, that I might live unto God. 20. I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me:*

*and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave Himself for me. 21. I do not frustrate the grace of God: for if righteousness come by the law, then Christ is dead in vain."*

## 2 Corinthians 5:14 – 21

*"For the love of Christ constraineth us; because we thus judge, that if one died for all, then were all dead: 15. And that He died for all, that they which live should not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto Him which died for them, and rose again. 16. Wherefore henceforth know we no man after the flesh: yea, though we have known Christ*

*after the flesh, yet now henceforth know we Him no more. 17. Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new. 18. And all things are of God, who hath reconciled us to Himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministry of reconciliation; 19. To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the*

*world unto Himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and hath committed unto us the word of reconciliation. 20. Now then we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech you by us: we pray you in Christ's stead, be ye reconciled to God. 21. For He hath made Him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in Him."*

We have **all** died in Christ Jesus. We can only know the Person of Jesus Christ **by the Spirit of God**. I am a **new** creature; the Love of God **as it is explained in Christ** has been laid bare to every man.

**Romans 10:1 – 13**

*"Brethren, my heart's desire and prayer for Israel is, that they might be saved. 2. For I bear them record that they have a zeal of God, but not according to knowledge. 3. For they being ignorant of God's righteousness, and going about to establish their own righteousness, have not submitted themselves unto the righteousness of God. 4. For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believeth. 5. For Moses describeth the righteousness which is of*

*the law, That the man which doeth those things shall live by them. 6. But the righteousness which is of faith speaketh on this wise, Say not in thine heart, Who shall ascend into heaven? (that is, to bring Christ down from above) 7. Or, Who shall descend into the deep? (that is, to bring up Christ again from the dead.) 8. But what saith it? The word is nigh thee, even in thy mouth, and in thy heart: that is, the word of faith, which we preach; 9. That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth*

*the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised Him from the dead, thou shalt be saved. 10. For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation. 11. For the scripture saith, Whosoever believeth on Him shall not be ashamed. 12. For there is no difference between the Jew and the Greek: for the same Lord over all is rich unto all that call upon Him. 13. For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved."*

The Law is gone; now I have to obey Christ – which is more compelling, because the Law was given by Moses to his people, but Christ was given to all men! God's Mercy met with Justice, and He produced the Criminal, the One Who should die.

**Romans 6:1 – 11**

*"What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound? 2. God forbid. How shall we, that are dead to sin, live any longer therein? 3. Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into His death? 4. Therefore we are buried with Him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from*

*the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. 5. For if we have been planted together in the likeness of His death, we shall be also in the likeness of His resurrection: 6. Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with Him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin. 7. For he that*

*is dead is freed from sin. 8. Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with Him: 9. Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead dieth no more; death hath no more dominion over Him. 10. For in that He died, He died unto sin once: but in that He liveth, He liveth unto God. 11. Likewise reckon ye also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord."*

**Philippians 2:1 – 11**

*"If there be therefore any consolation in Christ, if any comfort of love, if any fellowship of the Spirit, if any bowels and mercies, 2. Fulfil ye my joy, that ye be likeminded, having the same love, being of one accord, of one mind. 3. Let nothing be done through strife or vainglory; but in lowliness of mind let each esteem other better than themselves. 4. Look*

*not every man on his own things, but every man also on the things of others. 5. Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus: 6. Who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God: 7. But made Himself of no reputation, and took upon Him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men: 8. And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled*

*Himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross. 9. Wherefore God also hath highly exalted Him, and given Him a name which is above every name: 10. That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth; 11. And that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father."*

The mind of Christ was **doing exactly what God told Him to do**. Christ is God's Head of God's Church. He is the Firstborn from the Dead; we **must** give Christ the pre-eminence in all our lives.



## The Reason For God's Silence

### **1 Corinthians 2:6 – 9**

*"Howbeit we speak wisdom among them that are perfect: yet not the wisdom of this world, nor of the princes of this world, that come to nought: 7. But we speak the wisdom of God in a*

*mystery, even the hidden wisdom, which God ordained before the world unto our glory: 8. Which none of the princes of this world knew: for had they known it, they would not have crucified the*

*Lord of glory. 9. But as it is written, Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love Him."*

This is the Mystery.

### **Ephesians 3:3 – 6**

*"How that by revelation He made known unto me the mystery; (as I wrote afore in few words, 4. Whereby, when ye read, ye may understand*

*my knowledge in the mystery of Christ) 5. Which in other ages was not made known unto the sons of men, as it is now revealed unto His holy apostles and*

*prophets by the Spirit; 6. That the Gentiles should be fellowheirs, and of the same body, and partakers of His promise in Christ by the gospel."*

God in His heart designed the Church to include everyone :

The Jews could never have got the Gentiles to crucify Christ in the way God wanted Christ crucified if the Gentiles had known that God had given Him to be King to the Gentiles too. If the Gentiles – the "princes of this world" – knew that He was their Saviour, their King, they would not have crucified Him;

And the Jews would not have crucified Christ if they had known that through the Crucified Christ, God would accept all men, both Jew and Gentile –

So, God kept silent, because Christ had to be crucified for God to be able to persuade men of all nations that they can be saved. God intended Christ to suffer so that He would know what it was to obey God without any help. The Cup which was offered Christ is the one He offers me : to serve Him, to obey Him – or to disobey Him. "[T]ake this cup away from Me..." [Mark 14:36] "[I]f this cup may not pass away from Me..." [Matthew 26:42], He cried. But it did not. He heard the lashings of the scourge in His heart – He had told David to write about them all. Christ had to be marred so that God could give all men salvation. This is the hidden Wisdom which God ordained before the world for our glory [2 Corinthians 2:6 – 9].

### **Ephesians 3:4 – 10**

*"Whereby, when ye read, ye may understand my knowledge in the mystery of Christ) 5. Which in other ages was not made known unto the sons of men, as it is now revealed unto His holy apostles and prophets by the Spirit; 6. That the Gentiles should be fellowheirs, and of the*

*same body, and partakers of His promise in Christ by the gospel: 7. Whereof I was made a minister, according to the gift of the grace of God given unto me by the effectual working of His power. 8. Unto me, who am less than the least of all saints, is this grace given, that I should preach among the Gentiles*

*the unsearchable riches of Christ; 9. And to make all men see what is the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the world hath been hid in God, who created all things by Jesus Christ: 10. To the intent that now unto the principalities and powers in heavenly places might be known by the church the manifold wisdom of God."*

God's Plan was for the whole world...

**Colossians 1:26 – 29**

*"Even the mystery which hath been hid from ages and from generations, but now is made manifest to His saints: 27. To whom God would make known what is the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles; which is Christ in you, the hope of glory: 28. Whom we preach, warning every man, and teaching every man in all wisdom; that we may present every man perfect in Christ Jesus: 29. Whereunto I also labour, striving according to His working, which worketh in me mightily."*

This is the Reason for God's silence; His Desire to save all men.

**1 Timothy 2:4**

*"Who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth."* It is the Will of God that all men should come to Repentance. If Pilate had known that, he would have suppressed the Jewish rebellion.

**2 Peter 3:9**

*"The Lord is not slack concerning His promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance."* The crucifixion of Christ publicly shows that "God so loved the world" [John 3:16] – "all men everywhere" [Acts 17:30] – Jew and Gentile in the Church of Christ! The relationship of love to Christ is the qualification. I must appreciate what He looks like now. It is only as I love Christ that God deals with me – how am I related to Christ...? Salvation is for all who are related to Christ Crucified – by Love. God's Love goes beyond all boundaries...

**Ephesians 5:22 – 32**

*"Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as unto the Lord. 23. For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the church: and He is the saviour of the body. 24. Therefore as the church is subject unto Christ, so let the wives be to their own husband in every thing. 25. Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave Himself for it; 26. That He might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word, 27. That He might present it to Himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish. 28. So ought men to love their wives as their own bodies. He that loveth his wife loveth himself. 29. For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourisheth it and cherisheth it, even as the Lord the church: 30. For we are members of His body, of His flesh, and of His bones. 31. For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh. 32. This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the church."*

The Revelation of God is given now because the Reason for His silence was fulfilled – Christ Crucified. Salvation is for all who are ready and willing to live with Christ Crucified.

**1 Corinthians 15:50 – 58**

*"Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption. 51. Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, 52. In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. 53. For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality. 54. So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory. 55. O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory? 56. The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law. 57. But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ. 58. Therefore, my beloved brethren, be ye steadfast, unmoveable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, forasmuch as ye know that your labour is not in vain in the Lord."*

It is the dead **in Christ** that shall be raised incorruptible; and we who are alive **in Christ** shall be changed. Death is swallowed up in Victory, because Christ is the Victor; the Victory – no one else! Christ is the lone, single Victor over sin. No one else; not God the Father, no one else but Christ is both the Victor and the Victory! In **the Lord Jesus Christ** is our Victory over sin and death!!

## THE CONCLUSION OF OUR MEDITATION ON "CONCEALED BY GOD"

1. We must be known by all to have a passion for Jesus Christ. Privately and publicly.

### **Philippians 3:7 – 11**

*"But what things were gain to me, those I counted loss for Christ. 8. Yea doubtless, and I count all things but loss for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them but dung, that I may win Christ, 9. And be found in Him, not having mine own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith: 10. That I may know Him, and the power of His resurrection, and the fellowship of His sufferings, being made conformable unto His death; 11. If by any means I might attain unto the resurrection of the dead."*

2. We must all be filled with the Holy Ghost.

### **Ephesians 5:18 – 21**

*"And be not drunk with wine, wherein is excess; but be filled with the Spirit; 19. Speaking to yourselves in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing and making melody in your heart to the Lord; 20. Giving thanks always for all things unto God and the Father in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ; 21. Submitting yourselves one to another in the fear of God."*

### **Romans 8:1, 14**

*"There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. 14. For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God."*

3. We all must behave as is fitting for members of the Church of God which is the Body of Christ.

### **John 17:20 – 26**

*"Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on Me through their word; 21. That they all may be one; as Thou, Father, art in Me, and I in Thee, that they also may be one in Us: that the world may believe that Thou hast sent Me. 22. And the glory which Thou gavest Me I have given them; that they may be one, even as We are one: 23. I in them, and Thou in Me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that Thou hast sent Me, and hast loved them, as Thou hast loved Me. 24. Father, I will that they also, whom Thou hast given Me, be with Me where I am; that they may behold My glory, which Thou hast given Me: for Thou lovest Me before the foundation of the world. 25. O righteous Father, the world hath not known Thee: but I have known Thee, and these have known that Thou hast sent Me. 26. And I have declared unto them Thy name, and will declare it: that the love wherewith Thou hast loved Me may be in them, and I in them."*

-o-o-o-o-o-o-o-o-o-o-

## Day 5 – Confirmed By God

**2 Timothy 1:8 – 10** "Be not thou therefore ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me His prisoner: but be thou partaker of the afflictions of the gospel according to the power of God; **9.** Who hath saved us, and called us with an holy calling, not according to our works, but according to His own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus before the world began, **10.** But is now made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ, who hath abolished death, and hath brought life and immortality to light through the gospel."

### The Witness of the Holy Spirit

The Church of God is **a living reality** in this world, as in the world to come – in spite of sin, of wars, and rumours of wars...

It is being built up according to His Plan, Pattern and Purpose, until Jesus comes to take us to His Home. One Day – the Day of the "First Resurrection" [Revelation 20:5b – 6] – the Church will begin its new history, as determined by Him. The Reality of this Body is confirmed to us in this Day of Salvation, by the Holy Ghost, by Christ Crucified, and by God the Father.

Without the Holy Spirit there is no Life in the Church. The Spirit witnesses to the Reality of the Church :

### **2 Timothy 1:6 – 10**

<p><i>"Wherefore I put thee in remembrance that thou stir up the gift of God, which is in thee by the putting on of my hands. 7. For God hath not given us the spirit of fear; but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind. 8. Be not thou therefore ashamed</i></p>	<p><i>of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me His prisoner: but be thou partaker of the afflictions of the gospel according to the power of God; 9. Who hath saved us, and called us with an holy calling, not according to our works, but according to His own purpose and</i></p>	<p><i>grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus before the world began, 10. But is now made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ, who hath abolished death, and hath brought life and immortality to light through the gospel."</i></p>
-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------

The Holy Spirit witnesses to **God's Power** in the Church; He witnesses to His holiness, His holy Presence in the Church.

The Holy Ghost Himself is a Witness to **that Eternal Life** in the Church of God.

The Holy Spirit is a Witness to **the Faith of Christ** that is in the Church.

The Holy Spirit is a Witness of **the Divine Gifts** operated in the Church. The Holy Spirit has been given to us to operate the Gifts; unless I realise this, they will lie dormant.

The Holy Spirit is a Witness to the Reality of the Church through His Evidence of the Eternal Destiny of the Church.

### **Romans 8:15 – 16**

*"For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father. 16. The Spirit Himself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God."*

The Church as a Body is **the Family of God**. The Church on this earth has a Vision; has a Future.

**Ephesians 1:12 – 14**

*“That we should be to the praise of His glory, who first trusted in Christ. 13. In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise, 14. Which is the earnest of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of His glory.”*

It is not enough in God's sight to speak with other tongues; to be filled with the Holy Spirit means I have a Token of the Life to come.

**2 Corinthians 1:18 – 22**

*“But as God is true, our word toward you was not yea and nay. 19. For the Son of God, Jesus Christ, who was preached among you by us, even by me and Silvanus and Timotheus, was not yea and nay, but in Him was yea. 20. For all the promises of God in Him are yea, and in Him Amen, unto the glory of God by us. 21. Now He which stablisheth us with you in Christ, and hath anointed us, is God; 22. Who hath also sealed us, and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts.”*

If I name the Name of **Christ**, I should always live and speak in terms of Victory. Each local church is not dependent on an overseer or organisation, but directly to the Holy Spirit.

The Holy Spirit is also a Witness to the Reality of the Church in that Christ Crucified is seated in His disfigured Body on the Right Hand Side of God.

In every member there is this three-fold Witness : The Holy Ghost, the Word, and the Results – the Facts – of Calvary.

**Galatians 4:1 – 31** (vs1 – 21, vs 22 – 31 p.55)

*“Now I say, That the heir, as long as he is a child, differeth nothing from a servant, though he be lord of all; 2. But is under tutors and governors until the time appointed of the father. 3. Even so we, when we were children, were in bondage under the elements of the world: 4. But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth His Son, made of a woman, made under the law, 5. To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons. 6. And because ye are sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of His Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father. 7. Wherefore thou art no more a servant, but a son; and if a son, then an heir of God through Christ. 8. Howbeit then, when ye knew not God, ye did service unto them which by nature are no gods. 9. But now, after that ye have known God, or rather are known of God, how turn ye again to the weak and beggarly elements, whereunto ye desire again to be in bondage? 10 Ye observe days, and months, and times, and years. 11. I am afraid of you, lest I have bestowed upon you labour in vain. 12. Brethren, I beseech you, be as I am; for I am as ye are: ye have not injured me at all. 13. Ye know how through infirmity of the flesh I preached the gospel unto you at the first. 14. And my temptation which was in my flesh ye despised not, nor rejected; but received me as an angel of God, even as Christ Jesus. 15. Where is then the blessedness ye spake of? for I bear you record, that, if it had been possible, ye would have plucked out your own eyes, and have given them to me. 16. Am I therefore become your enemy, because I tell you the truth? 17. They zealously affect you, but not well; yea, they would exclude you, that ye might affect them. 18. But it is good to be zealously affected always in a good thing, and not only when I am present with you. 19. My little children, of whom I travail in birth again until Christ be formed in you, 20. I desire to be present with you now, and to change my voice; for I stand in doubt of you. 21. Tell me, ye that desire to be under the law, do ye not hear the law?”*

22. For it is written, that Abraham had two sons, the one by a bondmaid, the other by a freewoman. 23. But he who was of the bondwoman was born after the flesh; but he of the freewoman was by promise. 24. Which things are an allegory: for these are the two covenants; the one from the mount Sinai, which gendereth to bondage, which is Agar. 25. For this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabia, and answereth to Jerusalem which now is, and is in bondage with her children. 26. But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all. 27. For it is written, Rejoice, thou barren that bearest not; break forth and cry, thou that travailest not: for the desolate hath many more children than she which hath an husband. 28. Now we, brethren, as Isaac was, are the children of promise. 29. But as then he that was born after the flesh persecuted him that was born after the Spirit, even so it is now. 30. Nevertheless what saith the scripture? Cast out the bondwoman and her son: for the son of the bondwoman shall not be heir with the son of the freewoman. 31. So then, brethren, we are not children of the bondwoman, but of the free."

The Church of God is the Family of God. Through the Evidence of the Spirit – confirmed and endorsed by the Spirit – we cry "Abba, Father". I am a son of God and an heir with Christ!!

### 1 John 4:1 – 6

"Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world. 2. Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God: 3. And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist, whereof ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world. 4. Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them: because greater is He that is in you, than he that is in the world. 5. They are of the world: therefore speak they of the world, and the world heareth them. 6. We are of God: he that knoweth God heareth us; he that is not of God heareth not us. Hereby know we the spirit of truth, and the spirit of error."

Through the Presence of the Holy Ghost, we inherit the Blessings of God. The Holy Ghost makes me conscious that Christ has come in the flesh, that is, come in the flesh into Heaven to sit on God's Right Hand. The Witness of the Holy Ghost to the Reality of the Church is seen through the Evidence that every member of the Church of God lives for Christ. Jesus Christ is called the "holy child" [Acts 4:27 & 30] and we are being conformed into His image...

### 1 Corinthians 6:11 – 20

"And such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God. 12. All things are lawful unto me, but all things are not expedient: all things are lawful for me, but I will not be brought under the power of any. 13. Meats for the belly, and the belly for meats: but God shall destroy both it and them. Now the body is not for fornication, but for the Lord; and the Lord for the body. 14. And God hath both raised up the Lord, and will also raise up us by His own power. 15. Know ye not that your bodies are the members of Christ? shall I then take the members of Christ, and make them the members of an harlot? God forbid. 16. What? know ye not that he which is joined to an harlot is one body? for two, saith He, shall be one flesh. 17. But he that is joined unto the Lord is one spirit. 18. Flee fornication. Every sin that a man doeth is without the body; but he that committeth fornication sinneth against his own body. 19. What? know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own? 20. For ye are bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God's."

Our bodies are open to all God's treatment! We are told to glorify God in our body and in our spirit because we can!

## The Witness of Christ Crucified

Christ Crucified witnesses to the Reality of the Church through the Evidence in the Church, by His Death; of His relationship of Peace :

### **Romans 5:1 – 11**

*"Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ: 2. By whom also we have access by faith into this grace wherein we stand, and rejoice in hope of the glory of God. 3. And not only so, but we glory in tribulations also: knowing that tribulation worketh patience; 4. And patience, experience; and experience, hope:*

*5. And hope maketh not ashamed; because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us. 6. For when we were yet without strength, in due time Christ died for the ungodly. 7. For scarcely for a righteous man will one die: yet peradventure for a good man some would even dare to die. 8. But God commendeth His love toward us, in*

*that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us. 9. Much more then, being now justified by His blood, we shall be saved from wrath through Him. 10. For if, when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of His Son, much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved by His life. 11. And not only so, but we also joy in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we have now received the atonement."*

By the Spirit of God we get an **increasing, mounting love for Christ**. The Authority of the Church comes through **Christ Crucified**. There is no authority without Him.

### **Romans 5:12 - 21**

*"Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned: 13. (For until the law sin was in the world: but sin is not imputed when there is no law. 14. Nevertheless death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over them that had not sinned after the similitude of Adam's transgression, who is the figure of Him that was to come. 15. But not as the offence, so also is the free gift. For if through*

*the offence of one many be dead, much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, which is by one man, Jesus Christ, hath abounded unto many. 16. And not as it was by one that sinned, so is the gift: for the judgment was by one to condemnation, but the free gift is of many offences unto justification. 17. For if by one man's offence death reigned by one; much more they which receive abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness shall reign in life by one, Jesus Christ.) 18. Therefore as by the offence of*

*one judgment came upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life. 19. For as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous. 20. Moreover the law entered, that the offence might abound. But where sin abounded, grace did much more abound: 21. That as sin hath reigned unto death, even so might grace reign through righteousness unto eternal life by Jesus Christ our Lord."*

This passage reveals Christ witnessing to the Reality of the Church through the Evidence in the Church of His Obedience to God. Christ Crucified is my authority to say that my sins are blotted out. He is backing all that I say on His authority – authority against Satan. Christ is now ruling my life, not Satan any more. He has shaken the devil's grip, and destroyed him as **an effective force in my life**.



### 1 Corinthians 1:17 – 21

"For Christ sent me not to baptize, but to preach the gospel: not with wisdom of words, lest the cross of Christ should be made of none effect. 18. For the preaching of the cross is to them that perish foolishness; but unto us which are saved it is the power of God. 19. For it is written, I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and will bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent. 20. Where is the wise? where is the scribe? where is the disputer of this world? hath not God made foolish the wisdom of this world? 21. For after that in the wisdom of God the world by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God by the foolishness of preaching to save them that believe."

Believing these words, I am proclaiming His effectiveness in my life. It is by this Authority that Christ gives me the authoritative witness to preach Christ Crucified.

### 1 Corinthians 15:1 – 28

"Moreover, brethren, I declare unto you the gospel which I preached unto you, which also ye have received, and wherein ye stand; 2. By which also ye are saved, if ye keep in memory what I preached unto you, unless ye have believed in vain. 3. For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, how that Christ died for our sins according to the scriptures; 4. And that He was buried, and that He rose again the third day according to the scriptures: 5. And that He was seen of Cephas, then of the twelve: 6. After that, He was seen of above five hundred brethren at once; of whom the greater part remain unto this present, but some are fallen asleep. 7. After that, He was seen of James; then of all the apostles. 8. And last of all He was seen of me also, as of one born out of due time. 9. For I am the least of the apostles, that am not meet to be called an apostle, because I persecuted the church of God. 10. But by the grace of God I am what I am: and His grace which was bestowed upon me was not in vain; but I laboured more abundantly than they all: yet not I, but the grace of God which was with me. 11. Therefore whether it were I or they, so we preach, and so ye believed. 12. Now if Christ be preached that He rose from the dead, how say some among you that there is no resurrection of the dead? 13. But if there be no resurrection of the dead, then is Christ not risen: 14. And if Christ be not risen, then is our preaching vain, and your faith is also vain. 15. Yea, and we are found false witnesses of God; because we have testified of God that He raised up Christ: whom He raised not up, if so be that the dead rise not. 16. For if the dead rise not, then is not Christ raised: 17. And if Christ be not raised, your faith is vain; ye are yet in your sins. 18. Then they also which are fallen asleep in Christ are perished. 19. If in this life only we have hope in Christ, we are of all men most miserable. 20. But now is Christ risen from the dead, and become the firstfruits of them that slept. 21. For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead. 22. For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive. 23. But every man in his own order: Christ the firstfruits; afterward they that are Christ's at His coming. 24. Then cometh the end, when He shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when He shall have put down all rule and all authority and power. 25. For He must reign, till He hath put all enemies under His feet. 26. The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death. 27. For He hath put all things under His feet. But when He saith all things are put under Him, it is manifest that He is excepted, which did put all things under Him. 28. And when all things shall be subdued unto Him, then shall the Son also Himself be subject unto Him that put all things under Him, that God may be all in all."

Christ Crucified also gives me authority to **hope in Christ**. The Resurrection does not exclude all His help to live in this life; to be able to destroy sin and to deliver from sin and sickness.

## 2 Corinthians 4:1 – 18

"Therefore seeing we have this ministry, as we have received mercy, we faint not; 2. But have renounced the hidden things of dishonesty, not walking in craftiness, nor handling the word of God deceitfully; but by manifestation of the truth commending ourselves to every man's conscience in the sight of God. 3. But if our gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost: 4. In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them. 5. For we preach not ourselves, but Christ Jesus the Lord; and ourselves your servants for Jesus' sake. 6. For God, who commanded the light

to shine out of darkness, hath shined in our hearts, to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ. 7. But we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellency of the power may be of God, and not of us. 8. We are troubled on every side, yet not distressed; we are perplexed, but not in despair; 9. Persecuted, but not forsaken; cast down, but not destroyed; 10. Always bearing about in the body the dying of the Lord Jesus, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our body. 11. For we which live are alway delivered unto death for Jesus' sake, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our mortal flesh. 12. So then death worketh in us, but life in you. 13. We having the same spirit

of faith, according as it is written, I believed, and therefore have I spoken; we also believe, and therefore speak; 14. Knowing that He which raised up the Lord Jesus shall raise up us also by Jesus, and shall present us with you. 15. For all things are for your sakes, that the abundant grace might through the thanksgiving of many redound to the glory of God. 16. For which cause we faint not; but though our outward man perish, yet the inward man is renewed day by day. 17. For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory; 18. While we look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen: for the things which are seen are temporal; but the things which are not seen are eternal."

Christ Crucified proves the Reality of God's Church through the Evidence in the Church of His ability to endure the Cross, despising the shame. "Persecuted, but not forsaken; cast down, but not destroyed; Always bearing about in the body the dying of the Lord Jesus..." vs9 & 10 – the Fact that the Church endures the Cross also confirms that the Life of Jesus is in them, and ensures Victory for them!

Through the Evidence of Christ Crucified in the Church, which Evidence is Christ's ability as a Man to walk in the world in **constant Fellowship with God**, He testifies to the Reality of the Church.

### 1 John 1:5

"This then is the message which we have heard of Him, and declare unto you, that God is light, and in Him is no darkness at all." The Church walks in That Light.

Christ's Testimony to the Reality of the Church is the Evidence in the Church of **Christ's Victory over the world** :

### 1 John 5:4 – 5

"For whatsoever is born of God overcometh the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith. 5. Who is he that overcometh the world, but he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God?" I have then no access to the world – my

help is via Heaven, via Christ, God's Son. We speak now the language of God. We are to exercise the authority we have in Christ Crucified. The Holy Spirit bears witness to the Reality of the Church, God's Family, by showing forth Christ Crucified.

## The Witness of God the Father

## Hebrews 1:1 – 2

*"God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets, 2. Hath in these last days spoken unto us by His Son, whom He hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also He made the worlds."* God, in revealing

His Son, is confirming His own Person, His own Presence – the Reality that we have a Father, and He shows Who Christ is to Him.

From *Hebrews 2 v1* to *10 v18*, we see God revealing the Power of His Son – what God accomplished through His Son, and so revealing God's Love for us.

Then *Hebrews 10 v19* to *11 v40* we see God testifying to the Reality of His Church by speaking to us through the Person of Christ, and thereby showing who we are to God.

## Hebrews 11:40

*"God having provided some better thing for us, that they without us should not be made perfect."* This verse ends a Chapter revealing a City which has found-

ations, *v10*, a City prepared for the faithful, *v16*. This our City, whose Foundation, Temple, Light and Head is Christ, belongs to God our Father. [1 Corinthians 3:11; Revelation 21:22; Revelation 21:23; Ephesians 1:22]. No one will be in a higher position or receive more attention from God than the Church.

And in *Hebrews 12* and *13* God shows us again the Power of His Son in what He accomplished through Christ for His Church, and is therefore showing us what we mean to God.

## Ephesians 2:1 – 9

*"And you hath He quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins; 2. Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience: 3. Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others. 4. But God, who is rich in mercy, for His great love wherewith He loved us, 5. Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;) 6. And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus: 7. That in the ages to come He might shew the exceeding riches of His grace in His kindness toward us through Christ Jesus. 8. For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: 9. Not of works, lest any man should boast."*

Here, God is testifying to the Evidence of **the Church's Position in Eternity**. God looks forward to when, as a true Father, He will have opportunity and time to show His exceeding riches in Christ Jesus!!

## Revelation 1:12 – 20

*"And I turned to see the voice that spake with me. And being turned, I saw seven golden candlesticks; 13. And in the midst of the seven candlesticks one like unto the Son of man, clothed with a garment down to the foot, and girt about the paps with a golden girdle. 14. His head and His hairs were white like wool, as white as snow; and His eyes were as a flame of fire; 15. And His feet like unto fine brass, as if they burned in a furnace; and His voice as the sound of many waters. 16. And He had in His right hand seven stars: and out of His mouth went a sharp two-edged sword: and His countenance was as the sun shineth in his strength. 17. And when I saw Him, I fell at His feet as dead. And He laid His right hand upon me, saying unto me, Fear not; I am the first and the last: 18. I am He that liveth, and was dead; and, behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen; and have the keys of hell and of death. 19. Write the things which thou hast seen, and the things which are, and the things which shall be hereafter; 20. The mystery of the seven stars which thou sawest in My right hand, and the seven golden candlesticks. The seven stars are the angels of the seven churches: and the seven candlesticks which thou sawest are the seven churches."*

Here is revealed the Evidence of **the Church's Power in Eternity**. Christ in the midst of the Church – and we are kept by Him!

And in closing this Study on *The Church Confirmed by God*, we must take in the whole Chapter of *Revelation 5*! :

### **Revelation 5:1 – 14**

*"And I saw in the right hand of Him that sat on the throne a book written within and on the back-side, sealed with seven seals. 2. And I saw a strong angel proclaiming with a loud voice, Who is worthy to open the book, and to loose the seals thereof? 3. And no man in heaven, nor in earth, neither under the earth, was able to open the book, neither to look thereon. 4. And I wept much, because no man was found worthy to open and to read the book, neither to look thereon. 5. And one of the elders saith unto me, Weep not: behold, the Lion of the tribe of Juda, the Root of David, hath prevailed to open the book, and to loose the seven seals thereof. 6. And I beheld, and, lo, in the midst of the throne and of the four beasts, and in the midst of the elders, stood a Lamb as it had been slain, having seven horns and seven eyes, which are the seven Spirits of God sent forth into all the earth. 7. And He came and took the book out of the right hand of Him that sat upon the throne. 8. And when He had taken the book, the four beasts and four and twenty elders fell down before the Lamb, having every one of them harps, and golden vials full of odours, which are the prayers of saints. 9. And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals thereof: for Thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by Thy blood out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation; 10. And hast made us unto our God kings and priests: and we shall reign on the earth. 11. And I beheld, and I heard the voice of many angels round about the throne and the beasts and the elders: and the number of them was ten thousand times ten thousand and thousands of thousands; 12. Saying with a loud voice, Worthy is the Lamb that was slain to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honour, and glory, and blessing. 13. And every creature which is in heaven, and on the earth, and under the earth, and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I saying, Blessing, and honour, and glory, and power, be unto Him that sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb for ever and ever. 14. And the four beasts said, Amen. And the four and twenty elders fell down and worshipped Him that liveth for ever and ever."*

We see here God witnessing to the Evidence of **the Church's whole reason**, whole passion, **for living**; for obeying God; for coming out of the world; for opposing the evil relentlessly...

In v6 – the *"Lamb as it had been slain"*. John saw no Vision of the Future Events before he saw **The Lamb as it had been slain**. Nothing must dim that Vision, otherwise we will be in danger of going back into what we have come out from.

**We need God as our Father.**

**We need Christ as our Head.**

**And, We do need to be filled with the Holy Spirit, which is the Life of the Church!**

## THE CONCLUSION OF OUR MEDITATION ON "CONFIRMED BY GOD"

The Church is **a Living Reality** to God the Father **because** :

1. The Holy Spirit is in the world.
2. The Holy Spirit keeps on showing us that **Christ is at His Right Hand**. Any Movement that God initiates does not slacken but it increases.
3. The Holy Spirit reveals **Christ**. The Revelation of God the Father is in His **Son**, Jesus Christ. – the Revelation that we have God as our Father. Without the Revelation of Christ, there is no Revelation of God.

We **must** read and understand God's Word as it is written only **by the Holy Ghost**. To realise that this is the only way to understand, will enable me to be filled with the Holy Ghost. It means that **my** understanding must be put aside – deliberately. The people of Berea received the Word super-naturally – "*with all readiness of mind*" [Acts 17:11]. The non-spiritual way to listen to God's Word is to question it – to say, 'How can that be?' So when I first hear, I must listen to it and say, 'God is speaking to me, not the human speaker'. God's speaking means for me to go and do it! He doesn't speak to me except to cause me to understand. He intends that I should understand what He says. We **must** read and understand God's Word only by the Holy Spirit!

1. We must read and understand God's Word as it is written only by the Holy Ghost.

**2 Corinthians 3:5 – 6** *"Not that we are sufficient of ourselves to think any thing as of ourselves; but our sufficiency is of God; 6. Who also hath made us able ministers of the new testament; not of the letter, but of the Spirit: for the letter killeth, but the Spirit giveth life."*

2. We must use the Authority of Christ Crucified in every circumstance of our lives.

**1 Corinthians 1:17 – 31** (vs26 – 31 p.62)

*"For Christ sent me not to baptize, but to preach the gospel: not with wisdom of words, lest the cross of Christ should be made of none effect. 18. For the preaching of the cross is to them that perish foolishness; but unto us which are saved it is the power of God. 19. For it is written, I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and will bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent. 20. Where is the wise? where is the scribe? where is the disputer of this world? hath not God made foolish the wisdom of this world? 21. For after that in the wisdom of God the world by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God by the foolishness of preaching to save them that believe. 22. For*

*the Jews require a sign, and the Greeks seek after wisdom: 23. But we preach Christ crucified, unto the Jews a stumblingblock, and unto the Greeks foolishness; 24 But unto them which are called, both Jews and Greeks, Christ the power of God, and the wisdom of God. 25. Because the foolishness of God is wiser than men; and the weakness of God is stronger than men.*

26. For ye see your calling, brethren, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble, are called: 27. But God hath chosen the foolish things of the world to confound the wise; and God hath chosen the weak things of the world to confound the things which are mighty; 28. And base things of the world, and things which are despised, hath God chosen, yea, and things which are not, to bring to nought things that are: 29. That no flesh should glory in His presence. 30. But of Him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption: 31. That, according as it is written, He that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord."

3. We must regard God as a Father Who is listening always for His child's cry, ready and eager to answer with His Help.

**Ephesians 1:1 – 3**

"Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, to the saints which are at Ephesus, and to the faithful in Christ Jesus: 2. Grace be to you, and peace, from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ. 3. Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ."

Let these words from **Romans 8** speak for themselves as we close this Special First Week meditating on the Wonder of God's new Creation in Christ Jesus – the Church of God ...

**Romans 8:31 – 39**

"What shall we then say to these things? If God be for us, who can be against us? 32. He that spared not His own Son, but delivered Him up for us all, how shall He not with Him also freely give us all things? 33. Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect? It is God that justifieth. 34. Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea, rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us. 35. Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? shall tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword? 36. As it is written, For Thy sake we are killed all the day long; we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter. 37. Nay, in all these things we are more than conquerors through Him that loved us. 38. For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, 39. Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord."

# **THE CHURCH OF GOD** **- JESUS CHRIST -**

***S E E K   Y E   T H E   L O R D***  
***W E E K   2***

***Meditations on :***

***How The Church Responds to  
The Cost God Bore***

<b>Study No. 6</b>	<b>THE COST TO GOD</b>	<b>65</b>
<b>Study No. 7</b>	<b>CONCENTRATED ON CHRIST</b>	<b>81</b>
<b>Study No. 8</b>	<b>CONTROLLED BY THE SPIRIT</b>	<b>93</b>
<b>Study No. 9</b>	<b>COMMUNICATING WITH GOD</b>	<b>105</b>
<b>Study No. 10</b>	<b>CAUGHT AWAY TO ETERNITY</b>	<b>127</b>



## ***Day 6 – The Cost To God***

**Acts 20:28**

"Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God, which He hath purchased with His own blood."

### From Rest to Wrath

**Psalm 68:5 – 6**

*"A father of the fatherless, and a judge of the widows, is God in His holy habitation. 6. God setteth the solitary in families: He bringeth out those which are bound with chains: but the rebellious dwell in a dry land."*

**Psalm 107:41**

*"Yet setteth He the poor on high from affliction, and maketh Him families like a flock."*

**Proverbs 8:22 – 23**

*"The LORD possessed Me in the beginning of His way, before His works of old. 23. I was set up from everlasting, from the beginning, or ever the earth was."*

These three passages show how Christ was set up as God's Pattern for all God's Creation. His views, His ideas, and His ways of looking at things are there in Creation!

**Ephesians 1:3 – 4**

*"Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ: 4. According as He hath chosen us in Him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before Him in love." The Family is called the Church of God.*

God then proceeded to put His Plan into effect, and into the world which He made by Jesus Christ, were put the first people, where they could talk with Christ. It was a place of Rest and Peace. Christ was the Link between them and God because He had made all things for God.

Then Satan intruded into the situation and broke the Peace of the Family circle. Satan sowed :

Distrust of God  
Dissatisfaction with God  
Disobedience to God ...

... in the hearts and lives of God's children. God then, for the good of His children forced them out of the Garden and from the tree of Life. The first two children of God, and their generations after them, now had become children of wrath, children of disobedience and therefore the children of the devil. Now they had all become liars... To doubt God makes me a liar, because only God is True!

They lusted after their own desires because they became dissatisfied with God. Men turn to devils to satisfy their spirits.

They became lawless because they were disobedient. As Paul wrote to Timothy, "[M]en shall be lovers of their own selves ... lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God" [2 Timothy 3:2 – 4] – that is what disobedient people are.

## God's Remedy in Christ

But God, Who is Love, God Who is rich in Mercy, determined to build a Family around Him and show His Love to them as He did to Christ. God wanted children who could be His daily delight as Christ was. Because God kept His determination a closed Secret, hidden from His own myriads of angels, hidden from Satan and his fallen angels, hidden from the man and the woman, God appealed to the only One who could help.

**Psalm 89:19**                      *"Then Thou spakest in vision to Thy holy one, and saidst, I have laid help upon one that is mighty; I have exalted one chosen out of the people."* God laid help on One that is mighty; Help to retrieve a lost mankind, to create a holy Family, to put matters right :

1. To remove sin,
2. To reconcile the Family to God the Father,
3. To restore that relationship which Christ had not taken away [Psalm 69:4 *"They that hate Me without a cause are more than the hairs of Mine head: they that would destroy Me, being Mine enemies wrongfully, are mighty; then I restored that which I took not away."*]

Those ties of Love and loyalty were broken forever if the God of Love did nothing about it. *"Except the LORD build the house, they labour in vain that build it"*, says Psalm 127:1.

**1 John 4:10**                      *"Herein is love, not that we loved God, but that He loved us, and sent His Son to be the propitiation for our sins."* The word *"propitiation"* means a **covering**; blotting it out altogether.

## Examining The Cost

We will now make an examination of the Cost to God, arising out of God's beginning His Plan to have a Family, and Satan's subsequent intrusion. God's Plan was in fact strengthened – He would have a Family, in spite of sin. Doesn't the *Song of Songs 8:6* say, *"love is as strong as death"*?! Let us see the Cost to God : the Price demanded and paid...

Who demanded the Price, and for what? Who paid it? How much did He pay and how did He make His Payment??

This is vital : We must know and respond favourably to this knowledge. We must know what Price was demanded for full restoration.

To remove the sin of man, to satisfy the Eternal Law of the Eternal God, which, stated scripturally is *"the soul that sinneth, it shall die"* [Ezekiel 18:4], Christ agreed then and there to the Price that God demanded for releasing all mankind from its awful sentence of the Eternal torment now facing it. That sentence lay upon the people as an Eternal curse.

Satan is confined to tempting men to do evil, masquerading as a messenger of the Truth. He is *"as a roaring lion"* [1 Peter 5:8]; he paralyses his victims with fear of being found out, with guilt, with the fear of God as Judge. But God is the One against Whom sin is an offence. The release from that sentence was demanded by God, and Christ has released us from that fixed sentence. He has paid that Price to God.

## The Full Extent of Paying The Price

The Full Cost is that **Christ should continue His Eternal Life in a human Body of flesh and bones with a Face so disfigured as not to resemble any other human being alive, and with a Body so badly treated before death as to be beyond the semblance of a man** :

**Isaiah 52:13 – 15**

*"Behold, My servant shall deal prudently, He shall be exalted and extolled, and be very high. 14. As many were astonished at Thee; His visage was so marred more than any man, and His form more than the sons of men: 15. So shall He sprinkle many nations; the kings shall shut their mouths at Him: for that which had not been told them shall they see; and that which they had not heard shall they consider."*

*"He shall be exalted and extolled, and be very high"* – because He cleared man from that pall of guilt which resulted in Creation itself being distorted from its original Purpose and Plan. Many translations in no way take away from this Truth : **Christ's Face and Body will be very different from all other faces and bodies in Eternity.**

*"So shall He sprinkle many nations"* – through the Fact that He has made a contact with us.

*"[K]ings shall shut their mouths at Him"* – as they will be paralysed with fear at a Confrontation with Him.

*"[W]e hid as it were our faces from Him"* says **Isaiah 53:3**. The men who do not realise the extent of sin, will not want to bear the sight of Him. All those in Eternity will only be there because of LOVE; no other reason would cause us to want to be with such a Disfigured Person.

Satan tempts and deceives people as to the true Nature of God. His attempt to do this is along one line only : to keep people from the Holy Spirit's Revelation of the lovely Person of Jesus Christ.

**Isaiah 45:22**

*"Look unto Me, and be ye saved, all the ends of the earth: for I am God, and there is none else."* I have no God except I come to God through Christ – this terrible, everlasting Disfigurement seated on God's Right Hand with complete, permanent, incorruptible Evidence that every sin of every man has been **fully paid for** by Him, Jesus Christ.

**1 Peter 1:18 – 19**

*"Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from the vain conversation received by tradition from your father; 19. But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot."*

When sin in the lives of God's children set God the Task of finding freedom for them, Christ paid the Price. The Price was paid; His Blood was shed resulting in the marred Person of Christ.

## The Meaning of Redeem

It is **vital** to know the meaning of the word Redeem :

To release through payment of the Price demanded – which was the execution of all Mankind. So Christ met that Demand. In that Evidence, I have release from that sentence, through His Blood. His Sufferings were the Method through which He paid the Price. But the Full Cost is what He is now...

**Ephesians 1:7** *“In whom we have redemption through His blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of His grace.”* His Blood poured out is the Way He paid the Price; it left a marred Face and disfigured Body at God’s side – the Evidence of the Price paid.

**Mark 10:45** *“For even the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give His life a ransom for many.”* He came to do a job, to pay the Price, to serve God and God’s Creation – to give His Life a Ransom for many...

### The Meaning of Ransom

A Ransom is a Payment as demanded to secure the release. I am up against a Love that calls to my heart against my flesh, my reason, my intellect, my background, my training...

**The Price was paid in full on God’s demand.** It was agreed to then, from the foundation of the world. The Plan had to continue : to execute His Holy One to release every man from eternal torment. God is reported as being moved at one sinner who repents [Luke 15:7]. It was a terrible Price. See the dreadfulness of sin. Everyone’s sins, every sin had to be covered, and Christ had to pay the Price if He was to give God a Family. Christ paid on God’s Demand the Price necessary to release us from eternal death.

**1 Timothy 2:5 – 6** *“For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus; 6. Who gave Himself a ransom for all, to be testified in due time.”* There is only one Father Who must have a Family, and that Family must be like His Son. Only One Person could pay the Price, and help God destroy sin – the Man, Christ Jesus. In God’s time we shall see the Evidence, the absolute proof of our Salvation, of our escape from eternal damnation...

A mediator is a marvellous person! He has a lovely job, and if the Person is Jesus then His effecting at all and any Cost a Settlement of a dispute, is indeed wonderful!! He wipes out the difference between the two parties. The only difference between us and God is sin. Christ doesn’t object to my not having the answers, or to my weakness, but He does object to my sin, for that is what prevents God getting to His children.

**Colossians 2:12 – 14** *“Buried with Him in baptism, wherein also ye are risen with Him through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised Him from the dead. 13. And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath He quickened together with Him, having forgiven you all trespasses; 14. Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to His cross.”* This is the effectual Work of the Mediator.

### **Romans 10:1 – 4**

*“Brethren, my heart’s desire not according to knowledge. 3. For themselves unto the righteousness of and prayer to God for Israel they being ignorant of God’s God. 4. For Christ is the end of the is, that they might be saved. righteousness, and going about law for righteousness to every one 2. For I bear them record that to establish their own right- that believeth.” they have a zeal of God, but eousness, have not submitted*

A wrong action is a wrong action, and the Price that God has received indicates the horrific nature of sin. The Work was done in the open, publicly, for everyone to see...

# 1 Corinthians 1:26 – 31

*"For ye see your calling, brethren, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble, are called: 27. But God hath chosen the foolish things of the world to confound the wise; and God hath chosen the weak things of the world to confound the things which are mighty; 28. And base things of the world, and things which are despised, hath God chosen, yea, and things which are not, to bring to nought things that are: 29. that no flesh should glory in His presence. 30. But of Him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption: 31. That, according as it is written, He that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord."*

Christ has been made the Price of my release – in Himself. He is the Price from that eternal payment of death. He is made redemption for us.

# Isaiah 50:4 – 7

*"The Lord GOD hath given Me ear to hear as the learned. 5. The Lord GOD hath opened Mine ear, and I was not rebellious, neither turned away back. 6. I gave My back to the smiters, and My cheeks to them that plucked off the hair: I hid not My face from shame and spitting. 7. For the Lord GOD will help Me; therefore shall I not be confounded: therefore have I set My face like a flint, and I know that I shall not be ashamed."*

# Psalms 129:3

*"The plowers plowed upon My back: they made long their furrows."*

This is the Price demanded in full, and this is the Way the Payment was extracted from Christ. A dreadful sight... When the Blood had been poured out, in that Body, He rose from the dead...

## The Cost of Paying the Price

# Psalms 22:14 – 17

*"I am poured out like water, and all My bones are out of joint: My heart is like wax; it is melted in the midst of My bowels. 15. My strength is dried up like a potsherd; and My tongue cleaveth to My jaws; and Thou hast brought Me into the dust of death. 16. For dogs have compassed Me: the assembly of the wicked have inclosed Me: they pierced My hands and My feet. 17. I may tell all My bones: they look and stare upon Me."*

# vs22 – 25

*"I will declare Thy name unto My brethren: in the midst of the congregation will I praise Thee. 23. Ye that fear the LORD, praise Him; all ye the seed of Jacob, glorify Him; and fear Him, all ye the seed of Israel. 24. For He hath not despised nor abhorred the affliction of the afflicted; neither hath He hid His face from Him; but when He cried unto Him, He heard. 25. My praise shall be of Thee in the great congregation: I will pay My vows before them that fear Him."*

# Psalms 3:7 – 8

*"Arise, O LORD; save Me, O My God: for Thou hast smitten all Mine enemies upon the cheek bone; Thou hast broken the teeth of the ungodly. 8. Salvation belongeth unto the LORD: Thy blessing is upon Thy people. Selah."*

It was His cheekbone that took the smiting...

**Psalm 6:6 – 7**

*"I am weary with My groaning; all the night make I My bed to swim; I water My couch with My tears. 7. Mine eye is consumed because of grief; it waxeth old because of all Mine enemies." There was a **Cost**; it cost Him something to pay the Price.*

By one man sin entered, and by one Man it was removed. His eyes were failing physically; He couldn't see the people He loved, whom He had asked to be forgiven. Christ was determined to die and God was determined for Him to die.

**Psalm 31:1 – 24**

*"In Thee, O LORD, do I put My trust; let Me never be ashamed: deliver Me in Thy righteousness. 2. Bow down Thine ear to Me; deliver Me speedily: be Thou My strong rock, for an house of defence to save Me. 3. For Thou art My rock and My fortress; therefore for Thy name's sake lead Me, and guide Me. 4. Pull Me out of the net that they have laid privily for Me: for Thou art My strength. 5. Into Thine hand I commit My spirit: Thou hast redeemed Me, O LORD God of truth. 6. I have hated them that regard lying vanities: but I trust in the LORD. 7. I will be glad and rejoice in Thy mercy: for Thou hast considered My trouble; Thou hast known My soul in adversities; 8. And hast not shut Me up into the hand of the enemy: Thou hast set My feet in a large room. 9. Have mercy*

*upon Me, O LORD, for I am in trouble: Mine eye is consumed with grief, yea, My soul and My belly. 10. For My life is spent with grief, and My years with sighing: My strength faileth because of Mine iniquity, and My bones are consumed. 11. I was a reproach among all Mine enemies, but especially among My neighbours, and a fear to Mine acquaintance: they that did see Me without fled from Me. 12. I am forgotten as a dead man out of mind: I am like a broken vessel. 13. For I have heard the slander of many: fear was on every side: while they took counsel together against Me, they devised to take away My life. 14. But I trusted in Thee, O LORD: I said, Thou art My God. 15. My times are in Thy hand: deliver Me from the hand of Mine enemies, and from them that persecute Me. 16. Make Thy face to shine upon Thy servant: save Me for Thy mercies'*

*sake. 17. Let Me not be ashamed, O LORD; for I have called upon Thee: let the wicked be ashamed, and let them be silent in the grave. 18. Let the lying lips be put to silence; which speak grievous things proudly and contemptuously against the righteous. 19. Oh how great is Thy goodness, which Thou hast laid up for them that fear Thee; which Thou hast wrought for them that trust in Thee before the sons of men! 20. Thou shalt hide them in the secret of Thy presence from the pride of man: Thou shalt keep them secretly in a pavilion from the strife of tongues. 21. Blessed be the LORD: for He hath shewed Me His marvellous kindness in a strong city. 22. For I said in my haste, I am cut off from before Thine eyes: nevertheless Thou heardest the voice of My supplications when I cried unto Thee. 23. O love the LORD, all ye His saints: for the LORD preserveth the faithful, and plentifully rewardeth the proud doer. 24. Be of good courage, and He shall strengthen your heart, all ye that hope in the LORD."*

**Psalm 38:1 – 12**

*"O LORD, rebuke Me not in Thy wrath: neither chasten Me in Thy hot displeasure. 2. For Thine arrows stick fast in Me, and Thy hand presseth Me sore. 3. There is no soundness in My flesh because of Thine anger; neither is there any rest in My bones because of My sin. 4. For Mine iniquities are gone over Mine head: as an heavy burden*

*they are too heavy for Me. 5. My wounds stink and are corrupt because of My foolishness. 6. I am troubled; I am bowed down greatly; I go mourning all the day long. 7. For My loins are filled with a loathsome disease: and there is no soundness in My flesh. 8. I am feeble and sore broken: I have roared by reason of the disquietness of My heart. 9. Lord, all My desire*

*is before Thee; and My groaning is not hid from Thee. 10. My heart panteth, My strength faileth Me: as for the light of Mine eyes, it also is gone from Me. 11. My lovers and My friends stand aloof from My sore; and My kinsmen stand afar off. 12. They also that seek after My life lay snares for Me: and they that seek My hurt speak mischievous things, and imagine deceits all the day long."*

These *Psalms* are full of the terrible agony He suffered. My sin He appropriated to Himself, for He suffered in my stead. Men didn't hear the agony of Calvary as recorded here in these *Psalms*, but God heard – He was doing it for God. My heart must be moved...

**Psalm 63:1**                      *"O GOD, Thou art My God; early will I seek Thee: My soul thirsteth for Thee, My flesh longeth for Thee in a dry and thirsty land, where no water is."*

This is not an ordinary man. In spite of what was upon Him from God, yet He was thirsting for God. He knew there was no other Way.

**Psalm 73:26**                      *"My flesh and My heart faileth: but God is the strength of My heart, and My portion for ever."*

**Psalm 102:1 – 5**

*"Hear my prayer, O LORD, and let My cry come unto Thee. 2. Hide not Thy face from Me in the day when I am in trouble; incline Thine ear unto Me: in the day when I call answer Me speedily. 3. For My days are consumed like smoke, and My bones are burned as an hearth. 4. My heart is smitten, and withered like grass; so that I forget to eat My bread. 5. By reason of the voice of My groaning My bones cleave to My skin."*

**Psalm 110:3**                      *"Thy people shall be willing in the day of Thy power, in the beauties of holiness from the womb of the morning: Thou hast the dew of Thy youth."* The same Source that produced the morning, in that same Source was the beauties of holiness : the terrible disfiguring marks, through His obedience. The dew of His youth was the evidence of the night He had passed through.

**Zechariah 12:10**                      *"[A]nd they shall look upon Me whom they have pierced, and they shall mourn for Him, as one mourneth for his only son..."*

**John 19:30 – 37**

*"When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar, He said, It is finished: and He bowed His head, and gave up the ghost. 31. The Jews therefore, because it was the preparation, that the bodies should not remain upon the cross on the sabbath day, (for that sabbath day was an high day,) besought Pilate that their legs might be broken, and that they might be taken away. 32. Then came the soldiers, and brake the legs of the first, and of the other which was crucified with Him. 33. But when they came to Jesus, and saw that He was dead already, they brake not His legs: 34. But one of the soldiers with a spear pierced His side, and forthwith came there out blood and water. 35. And he that saw it bare record, and his record is true: and he knoweth that he saith true, that ye might believe. 36. For these things were done, that the scripture should be fulfilled, A bone of Him shall not be broken. 37. And again another scripture saith, They shall look on Him whom they pierced."*

They looked on Him whom they had pierced, as the prophet said. But regarding His bones not broken, the lambs that were slain did not have their bones broken as a foreshadowing of God's Pattern and Price by which we live – The LAMB.

*Exodus 12* is the record of the children of Israel's deliverance from slavery in Egypt, through the blood of the lamb. All the details of the Passover lamb are precisely given, and *v46* says, *"In one house shall it be eaten; thou shalt not carry forth ought of the flesh abroad out of the house; neither shall ye break a bone thereof."*

**Hebrews 10:19 -20**

*"Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holiest by the blood of Jesus, 20. By a new and living way, which He hath consecrated for us, through the veil, that is to say, His flesh." Consider these two phrases : "by the blood", means the Method by which we come to God; "by a new and living way" is the Evidence of the Price which He paid.*

**Revelation 1:7**

*"Behold, He cometh with clouds; and every eye shall see Him, and they also which pierced Him: and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of Him. Even so, Amen."*

When Christ comes with His Church to deliver His ancient people, they will greatly mourn and wail at His Appearance. They had disbelieved that He was their Deliverer but believed fervently that God would deliver them, but then they will know that they had caused His disfiguring and now He was coming to save them. When a born-again person hears that his sins are covered, his grief is gone.

**Revelation 21:23**

*"And the city had no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lamb is the light thereof."*

This glory of God, the eternally physical effects of His Holiness, of His unspeakable Humility, all this the Lamb made understandable. He is the Light of this Glory. Through Him men could realise God's Love and Humility. As I gaze upon that Evidence by faith, with hope in my heart, then I will see Him.

The Method by which the sins were removed has disappeared, but the Cost of paying the Price remains – the Evidence of God's Forgiveness.

The following passages record how our Lord Jesus paid the Price for our redemption. Only a selection is printed here. Please read through them all – in the King James Bible :

*Matthew 26 & 27; Luke 22:39 - 44, 63 - 71; John 19:1 - 6; Luke 24:38 - 40; John 20:24 - 31*

**Matthew 26:1 - 2**

*"And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished all these sayings, He said unto His disciples, 2. Ye know that after two days is the feast of the passover, and the Son of man is betrayed to be crucified."*

**Luke 22:39 - 42**

*"And He came out, and went, as He was wont, to the mount of Olives; and His disciples also followed Him. 40. And when He was at the place, He said unto them, Pray that ye enter not into temptation. 41. And He was withdrawn from them about a stone's cast, and kneeled down, and prayed, 42. Saying, Father, if Thou be willing, remove this cup from Me: nevertheless not My will, but Thine, be done."*

**John 19:1 - 4**

*"Then Pilate therefore took Jesus, and scourged Him. 2. And the soldiers platted a crown of thorns, and put it on His head, and they put on Him a purple robe, 3. And said, Hail, King of the Jews! and they smote Him with their hands. 4. Pilate therefore went forth again, and saith unto them, Behold, I bring Him forth to you, that ye may know that I find no fault in Him."*

**Luke 24:38 - 40**

*"And He said unto them, Why are ye troubled? and why do thoughts arise in your hearts? 39. Behold My hands and My feet, that it is I Myself: handle Me, and see; for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see Me have. 40. And when He had thus spoken, He shewed them His hands and His feet."*



**John 20:27 – 28**

*"Then saith He to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, and behold My hands; and reach hither thy hand, and thrust it into My side: and be not faithless, but believing. 28. And Thomas answered and said unto Him, My Lord and my God."* Thomas' response to

his disfigured Saviour – **"My Lord and my God"**! It is important that we realise **by faith** the state of Christ's Body, because **v29**, says, *"Jesus saith unto him, Thomas, because thou hast seen Me, thou hast believed: blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed."* Thomas had to see Him in order to believe, but He said, *'You have seen Me; blessed are they who have not seen and yet believe'* – that He has paid the Price for sins. God had to see a Way to reconcile the erring Family to Himself...

### The Meaning of Reconciliation

Reconciliation is to change men toward God.

**2 Corinthians 5:18 – 19**

*"And all things are of God, who hath reconciled us to Himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministry of reconciliation; 19. To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto Himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and hath committed unto us the word of reconciliation."*

To reconcile the Family – to present men to God as completely changed to God – Christ agreed there and then to the Price as demanded by God, as accepting men and women as **no longer dissatisfied**, or disobedient, or distrustful. The Price He now has paid to God on our behalf involved **Suffering**. He could not redeem us, to die to remove the sentence of eternal torment, to present us to God as obedient, satisfied and trustful children **without suffering for it**. By the nature of things, Love must suffer because of sin. Love is not itself suffering, but only Love can suffer, because it has no sin in it – so it **can suffer on someone else's account**... Therefore He became God's First Perfect Man – the obedient Man, through living a Life only of suffering from His Birth into this world up to His Death on the Cross.

**Isaiah 53:1 – 4**

*"Who hath believed our report? and to whom is the arm of the LORD revealed? 2. For He shall grow up before Him as a tender plant, and as a root out of a dry ground: He hath no form nor comeliness; and when we shall see Him, there is no beauty that we should desire Him. 3. He is despised and rejected of men; a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were our faces from Him; He was despised, and we esteemed Him not. 4. Surely He hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem Him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted."*

**"Who hath believed our report?"** – because the Price is terrible... The only opportunity He had to live with the sons of men was also the only opportunity to pay the Price to reconcile them unto God. He had come to suffer – *"a tender plant"*, easily bruised, battered and attacked. The slightest blow will bruise a tender plant, and He came to be treated as a tender plant can be treated in callous hands. He was open to every experience of suffering.

**"[A] root out of a dry ground"** – He received no respite from man or devil; no help, no support. He was as one who couldn't help himself. He was dependent only upon the One who had planted Him. Whatever suffering was put on Him, He could not use any means to escape, because this was the Price. I must be punished for my sins. There is **no** reason for me to doubt God; to be dissatisfied with Him. God had to be satisfied that Christ's Suffering gave Him the Reason to accept me.

*“He is despised and rejected of men”* – all Creation listened to Him and obeyed Him, but of men whom He came to save He was despised and treated of no account. And God accepted His willingness and gave no orders for His release. This is the Price He paid.

**Psalm 22:6**

*“But I am a worm, and no man; a reproach of men, and despised of the people.”*

*“[A] man of sorrows”* – not a sad Man; He came to suffer. I had not only to be released from my criminal position but also to be acceptable to God as a child of His Love, as someone He can trust. Christ’s suffering was intended to have two effects :

1. To satisfy God that the Suffering was worth having me as a loving child
2. To draw men to God.

It is not to make me sympathetic – *“[W]eep not for Me, but weep for yourselves”*, He said to the women as He went to Calvary [Luke 23:28]; it is sin that produces tears...

*“[W]e did esteem Him stricken”* – He was a terrible sight, and His Sufferings were equally terrible. So intense that we hid our faces, so painful we can only stand and look on helplessly, knowing that it is outside my grasp, beyond my capacity to comprehend. We cannot feel His Sufferings in us except in some measure where the Holy Spirit is willing to reveal it to a heart.

### The Sufferings of Obedience

Peter, James and John fell asleep whilst Christ was in agony in prayer. His Sufferings became more intense, mounting in severity as He went on from His Birth to Gethsemane. Suffering which was brought about only by His doing exactly what God wanted Him to do. He was given no respite, no chance to recover, from one suffering to another, and which ended only when His Blood had been poured out completely. When He cried, *“It is finished”* [John 19:30] it was not only all sin accounted for, but all suffering too. He couldn’t have reached that point of perfection as a Man without suffering...

**Lamentations 1:12**

*“Is it nothing to you, all ye that pass by? behold, and see if there be any sorrow like unto My sorrow, which is done unto Me, wherewith the LORD hath afflicted Me in the day of His fierce anger.”*

**Isaiah 53:1 – 9**

*“Who hath believed our report? and to whom is the arm of the LORD revealed? 2. For He shall grow up before Him as a tender plant, and as a root out of a dry ground: He hath no form nor comeliness; and when we shall see Him, there is no beauty that we should desire Him. 3. He is despised and rejected of men; a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were our faces from Him; He was despised, and we esteemed Him*

*not. 4. Surely He hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem Him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted. 5. But He was wounded for our transgressions, He was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon Him; and with His stripes we are healed. 6. All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the LORD hath laid on Him the iniquity of us all. 7. He was oppressed, and He was afflict-*

*ed, yet He opened not His mouth: He is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so He openeth not His mouth. 8. He was taken from prison and from judgment: and who shall declare His generation? for He was cut off out of the land of the living: for the transgression of my people was He stricken. 9. And He made His grave with the wicked, and with the rich in His death; because He had done no violence, neither was any deceit in His mouth.”*

The first nine verses of *Isaiah* 53 reveal the details of intense suffering then says

**v10**

*"Yet it pleased the LORD to bruise Him; He hath put Him to grief: when Thou shalt make His soul an offering for sin, He shall see His seed, He shall prolong His days, and the pleasure of the LORD shall prosper in His hand".*

**Lamentations 3:7 – 17**

*"He hath hedged Me about, that I cannot get out: He hath made My chain heavy. 8. Also when I cry and shout, He shutteth out My prayer. 9. He hath inclosed My ways with hewn stone, He hath made My paths crooked. 10. He was unto Me as a bear lying in wait, and as a lion in secret places. 11. He hath turned aside My ways, and pulled Me in pieces: He hath made Me desolate. 12. He hath bent His bow, and set Me as a mark for the arrow. 13. He hath caused the arrows of His quiver to enter into My reins. 14. I was a derision to all My people; and their song all the day. 15. He hath filled Me with bitterness, He hath made Me drunken with wormwood. 16. He hath also broken My teeth with gravel stones, He hath covered Me with ashes. 17. And Thou hast removed My soul far off from peace: I forgot prosperity."*

**Isaiah 53:12**

*"Therefore will I divide Him a portion with the great, and He shall divide the spoil with the strong; because He hath poured out His soul unto death: and He was numbered with the transgressors; and He bare the sin of many, and made intercession for the transgressors."*

**Hebrews 2:10**

*"For it became Him, for whom are all things, and by whom are all things, in bringing many sons unto glory, to make the captain of their salvation perfect through sufferings."* Christ's Sufferings were undeserved, but this was the Cost of the

Price to be paid. ["became Him" means that it perfectly suited God to perfect Christ by suffering.]

**Isaiah 53:11**

*"He shall see of the travail of His soul, and shall be satisfied: by His knowledge shall My righteous servant justify many; for He shall bear their iniquities."* "[B]y His knowledge" – of **suffering in obedience**. All His bones were out of joint. He was a target for all that which God chose for Him to receive.

**Psalms 18:4 – 6**

*"The sorrows of death compassed Me, and the floods of ungodly men made Me afraid. 5. The sorrows of hell compassed Me about: the snares of death prevented Me. 6. In My distress I called unto My God: He heard My voice out of His temple, and My cry came before Him, even into His ears."*

The "sorrows of death" are those relating only to those who would be punished by God for their sins. God made Christ to suffer instead. ["prevented" means that they were before Him; ever present.]

**Hebrews 5:7 – 9**

*"Who in the days of His flesh, when He had offered up prayers and supplications with strong crying and tears unto Him that was able to save Him from death, and was heard in that He feared; 8. Though He were a Son, yet learned He obedience by the things which He suffered; 9. And being made perfect, He became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey Him."*

Christ feared to disobey God, and so God heard Him, and so He became the Author of Eternal Salvation for us. We are called to be children; we must therefore suffer as God's children. We must be of that calibre. Unless I suffer in some measure as Christ suffered, I am not a loving child of a loving God.

**Galatians 4:1 – 5**

*"Now I say, That the heir, as long as he is a child, differeth nothing from a servant, though he be lord of all; 2. But is under tutors and governors until the time appointed of the father. 3. Even so we, when we were children, were in bondage under the elements of the world: 4. But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent His Son, made of a woman, made under the law, 5. To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons."*

**Romans 3:21 – 26**

*"But now the righteousness of God without the law is manifested, being witnessed by the law and the prophets; 22. Even the righteousness of God which is by faith of Jesus Christ unto all and upon all them that believe: for there is no difference: 23. For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God; 24. Being justified freely by His grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus: 25. Whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through faith in His blood, to declare His righteousness for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God; 26. To declare, I say, at this time His righteousness: that He might be just, and the justifier of him which believeth in Jesus."*

The sufferings of Christ had nothing to do with the Law. The Law says, *"the soul that sinneth it shall die"* – lose its life – but Christ humbled Himself, and Humility involves suffering.

The Sufferings of Christ were on my account: it is for me to believe this and experience the happy Relationship of having God as my Father. God demanded suffering to the fullest extent, that His human Body, and Mind and Spirit could suffer, because that is the Price which God required.

**Ephesians 4:30**

*"And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption."*

The Day of our Redemption will be the Day that the Price paid for me will be clearly seen from Heaven! We are not to grieve the Holy Spirit, for we are sealed with Him Who understands the Price which has been paid. I have been redeemed from being a bastard child to being God's son!

**2 Corinthians 5:18 – 20**

*"And all things are of God, who hath reconciled us to Himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministry of reconciliation; 19. To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto Himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and hath committed unto us the word of reconciliation. 20. Now then we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech you by us: we pray you in Christ's stead, be ye reconciled to God."*

**The Cost To God****Acts 20:28**

*"Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God, which He hath purchased with His own blood."*

What am I doing to feed the Church of God? The Price paid to restore us involved suffering that only Christ could explain and pay to restore to men trust in God. I should not want my needs and desires met except in God. I am now worthy of His Provision through Christ's Sufferings.

### **Galatians 3:22 – 29**

"But the scripture hath concluded all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe. 23. But before faith came, we were kept under the law, shut up unto the faith which should afterwards be revealed. 24.

Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us to Christ, that we might be justified by faith. 25. But after that faith is come, we are no longer under a schoolmaster. 26. For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus. 27. For as many of

you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ. 28. There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus. 29. And if ye be Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise."

Christ agreed to restore in me the delight and trust in God which I had never had! He restores what isn't there! God builds only on the foundation of Love – Jesus Christ!

### **Titus 2:14 -15**

"[Jesus Christ] Who gave Himself for us, that He might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto Himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works. 15. These things speak, and exhort, and rebuke with all authority. Let no man despise thee."

This is the Cost of His paying the Price : That He should accept forever the Position of being subject to God as the First-born of the Family. There are not two Heads to that Family – God is the Head, and Christ is the First-born now. It is a Position of permanent subjection to God.

### **Colossians 1:10 – 19**

"That ye might walk worthy of the Lord unto all pleasing, being fruitful in every good work, and increasing in the knowledge of God; 11. Strengthened with all might, according to His glorious power, unto all patience and longsuffering with joyfulness; 12. Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in

light: 13. Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of His dear Son: 14. In whom we have redemption through His blood, even the forgiveness of sins: 15. Who is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of every creature: 16. For by Him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they

be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by Him, and for Him: 17. And He is before all things, and by Him all things consist. 18. And He is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead; that in all things He might have the preeminence. 19. For it pleased the Father that in Him should all fullness dwell."

And this passage shows that of all that pertains to men, Christ has the pre-eminence.

### **Acts 13:32 – 42**

"And we declare unto you glad tidings, how that the promise which was made unto the fathers, 33. God hath fulfilled the same unto us their children, in that He hath raised up Jesus again; as it is also written in the second psalm, Thou art My Son, this day have I begotten Thee. 34. And as concerning that He raised Him up from the dead, now no more to return to corruption, He said on this wise, I will give you the sure

mercies of David. 35. Wherefore He saith also in another psalm, Thou shalt not suffer Thine Holy One to see corruption. 36. For David, after he had served his own generation by the will of God, fell on sleep, and was laid unto his fathers, and saw corruption: 37. But He, whom God raised again, saw no corruption. 38. Be it known unto you therefore, men and brethren, that through this man is preached unto you the forgiveness of sins: 39. And by Him

all that believe are justified from all things, from which ye could not be justified by the law of Moses. 40. Beware therefore, lest that come upon you, which is spoken of in the prophets; 41. Behold, ye despisers, and wonder, and perish: for I work a work in your days, a work which ye shall in no wise believe, though a man declare it unto you. 42. And when the Jews were gone out of the synagogue, the Gentiles besought that these words might be preached to them the next sabbath."

## The Firstborn from the Dead

Every member of God's Family is a certain recipient of all God's blessing – because of the First-born.

**Psalm 2:7** *"I will declare the decree: the LORD hath said unto Me, Thou art My Son; this day have I begotten Thee."*

**Psalm 16:10** *"For Thou wilt not leave My soul in hell; neither wilt Thou suffer Thine Holy One to see corruption."*

### **Hebrews 1:1 – 5**

*"God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets, 2. Hath in these last days spoken unto us by His Son, whom He hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also He made the worlds; 3. Who being the brightness of His glory, and the express image of His person, and upholding all things by the word of His power, when He had by Himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high; 4. Being made so much better than the angels, as He hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they. 5. For unto which of the angels said He at any time, Thou art My Son, this day have I begotten Thee? And again, I will be to Him a Father, and He shall be to Me a Son?"*

### **Hebrews 5:5 – 6**

*"So also Christ glorified not Himself to be made an high priest; but He that said unto Him, Thou art My Son, to day have I begotten Thee. 6. As He saith also in another place, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec."*

### **1 Corinthians 15:23 – 28**

*"But every man in his own order: Christ the firstfruits; afterward they that are Christ's at His coming. 24. Then cometh the end, when He shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when He shall have put down all rule and all authority and power. 25. For He must reign, till He hath put all enemies under His feet. 26. The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death. 27. For He hath put all things under His feet. But when He saith all things are put under Him, it is manifest that He is excepted, which did put all things under Him. 28. And when all things shall be subdued unto Him, then shall the Son also Himself be subject unto Him that put all things under Him, that God may be all in all."*

Christ paid a Price to make us objects of God's Blessing and Care. In paying that Price, part of the whole Cost to Him is that He has taken the Position as the Son of the Father permanently – forever...

**1 Corinthians 6:19 -20** *"What? know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own? 20. For ye are bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God's."*

Our bodies and spirits are made the receptacles of God's Blessings because of the Price paid by Christ.

### **Galatians 3:7 – 17 (vs7 – 11, vs 12 – 17 p.79)**

*"Know ye therefore that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham. 8. And the scripture, foreseeing that God would justify the heathen through faith, preached before the gospel unto Abraham, saying, In thee shall all nations be blessed. 9. So then they which be of faith are blessed with faithful Abraham. 10. For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them. 11. But that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, it is evident: for, The just shall live by faith."*

12. And the law is not of faith: but, The man that doeth them shall live in them. 13. Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree: 14. That the blessing of Abraham might come

on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ; that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith. 15. Brethren, I speak after the manner of men; Though it be but a man's covenant, yet if it be confirmed, no man disannulleth, or addeth thereto. 16. Now to Abraham and his seed were

the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ. 17. And this I say, that the covenant, that was confirmed before of God in Christ, the law, which was four hundred and thirty years after, cannot disannul, that it should make the promise of none effect."

If the Law were still operating, I would be under the curse and not under God's Blessing. **Because** of the Price paid by Christ which through His Sufferings has resulted in His disfigurement forever and His subjection forever in second place, **we are children of God**. When I really believe this a change and a move toward God **must** come about in my life, and I will let go of the things of this life. We are released from the Sentence of Eternal Torment, released from not being acceptable to God, and, we are released from trying to make up to God.

### Luke 21:20 – 28

"And when ye shall see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh. 21. Then let them which are in Judaea flee to the mountains; and let them which are in the midst of it depart out; and let not them that are in the countries enter thereinto. 22. For these be the days of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled. 23. But woe

unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck, in those days! for there shall be great distress in the land, and wrath upon this people. 24. And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled. 25. And there shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars;

and upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity; the sea and the waves roaring; 26. Men's hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those things which are coming on the earth: for the powers of heaven shall be shaken. 27. And then shall they see the Son of man coming in a cloud with power and great glory. 28. And when these things begin to come to pass, then look up, and lift up your heads; for your redemption draweth nigh."

This is a picture of this release : utter destruction, in those end times, but there is the hope of escape as He said, "[L]ook up, for your redemption draweth nigh". Jesus Christ is my Redemption – He paid the Price – and I will see Him when He comes if I believe on Him now.

### Hebrews 9:11 – 15

"But Christ being come an high priest of good things to come, by a greater and more perfect tabernacle, not made with hands, that is to say, not of this building; 12. Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but by His own blood He entered in once into the holy place,

having obtained eternal redemption for us. 13. For if the blood of bulls and goats, and the ashes of an heifer sprinkling the unclean, sanctifieth to the purifying of the flesh: 14. How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered Himself without spot to God,

purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God? 15. And for this cause He is the mediator of the new testament, that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions that were under the first testament, they which are called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance."

The eternal Sentence of death has been removed.

### Ephesians 2:5 – 6

"Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;) 6. And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus." – "**quickened**"; "**raised**". I am accepted as completely changed towards Him. I must see that I am completely changed!!

**There is no other price to equal the Price that Christ paid. It has an eternal Value...**

**Revelation 1:4 – 6**

*“John to the seven churches which are in Asia: Grace be unto you, and peace, from Him which is, and which was, and which is to come; and from the seven Spirits which are before His throne; 5. And from Jesus Christ, who is the faithful witness, and the first begotten of the dead, and the prince of the kings of the earth. Unto Him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in His own blood, 6. And hath made us kings and priests unto God and His Father; to Him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.”*

## THE CONCLUSION OF OUR MEDITATION ON “THE COST TO GOD”

Every thing God did cost Him something. He considered us without expecting consideration in return – and He didn’t receive any. I should continue to meet a need to the full when there is already another demand : Christ on the Cross met the need of His mother and of the thief as well as doing the Work of Redemption.

To be misjudged is also a way of suffering, or to be misunderstood. Of Christ it is written, *“Who, when He was reviled, reviled not again”* [1 Peter 2:23]. He put the reviling away and didn’t consider it again. As I am considering the Cost to God for my Salvation : My Christian life must cost me something. Only if I have love will it cost me. If I accept everything as from God I will behave properly in it.

**1 Thessalonians 5:18**

*“In every thing give thanks: for this is the will of God in Christ Jesus concerning you.”* That is part of the cost, to give thanks in every thing.

**Romans 8:28**

*“And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to His purpose.”* If we know that all things work for our good as we love God, then our spirit will be unprovoked. No one must see my suffering, else it is not suffering! I will be sympathised with by someone! It is love for Christ in me that suffers long [1 Corinthians 13:4].

**2 Corinthians 9:6 – 7**

*“But this I say, He which soweth sparingly shall reap also sparingly; and he which soweth bountifully shall reap also bountifully. 7. Every man according as he purposeth in his heart, so let him give; not grudgingly, or of necessity: for God loveth a cheerful giver.”* One would sow sparingly because of self interest and self preservation, giving only what can be spared.



## Day 7 – Concentrated on Christ

### Acts 17:2 – 3

"And Paul, as his manner was, went in unto them, and three sabbath days reasoned with them out of the scriptures, 3. Opening and alleging, that Christ must needs have suffered, and risen again from the dead; and that this Jesus, whom I preach unto you, is Christ."

### Salvation is a Person

The Church of God, every member of it, is concentrated on Jesus Christ. If I am not concentrated on Him, I must remedy it straight away. Paul preached the Person of Christ – His Sufferings, His Resurrection, His Origin and His Position as God's Message : "*this Jesus, whom I preach unto you, is Christ*".

Jesus Christ as a Person should be my preoccupation, because Jesus as a Person is **God manifest in the flesh** for my Salvation.

### Matthew 1:20 – 23

*"But while he thought on these things, behold, the angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a dream, saying, Joseph, thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife: for that which is conceived in her is of the Holy Ghost. 21. And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call His name JESUS: for He shall save His people from their sins. 22. Now all this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying, 23. Behold, a virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call His name Emmanuel, which being interpreted is, God with us."*

The Salvation of God is a Person, so, logically, the Church of God must hang on every word of this Person, every look, every movement. In this Person, God with us, physically, is our Salvation.

### Isaiah 7:14

*"Therefore the Lord Himself shall give you a sign; Behold, a virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call His name Immanuel."* This was the impetus for all the Church's activities and confidence. Wherever this Person is, whether in a stable, or a boat, in Jerusalem, or hanging on the Cross, or in Hell, **there** is present the full Power, the absolute Authority of God.

### Colossians 2:1 – 10

*"For I would that ye knew what great conflict I have for you, and for them at Laodicea, and for as many as have not seen my face in the flesh; 2. That their hearts might be comforted, being knit together in love, and unto all riches of the full assurance of understanding, to the acknowledgement of the mystery of God, and of the Father, and of Christ; 3. In whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge. 4. And this I say, lest any man should beguile you with enticing words. 5. For though I be absent in the flesh, yet am I with you in the spirit, joying and beholding your order, and the steadfastness of your faith in Christ. 6. As ye have therefore received Christ Jesus the Lord, so walk ye in Him: 7. Rooted and built up in Him, and stablished in the faith, as ye have been taught, abounding therein with thanksgiving. 8. Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ. 9. For in Him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily. 10. And ye are complete in Him, which is the head of all principality and power."*

This was the early church's driving passion to convince men that this was the Christ, their King; a Person named Jesus is the Christ.

## The Fullness of the Godhead

The Mystery of God would be of the Father, of the Holy Spirit, of Christ, not in human understanding. In Christ are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge – all that God knows; all the Answers God had are in this Person. The Colossian church had gone off Christ : they listened to knowledge of spiritual value, but they had gone off Him. Jesus the Person contains all that God is. The Person of Jesus Christ is the Beginning, the Origin of my life with God. Beyond Christ I cannot go. God accepts me in Christ. “[B]uilt up in Him”, v7, - He is my Goal, my objective.

All the members of the Church are constantly remembering that Christ is coming. Philosophy seeks for knowledge and in their seeking the Colossian church removed from the fact that they had all knowledge in Christ. To go off Christ means that I am blind, and rudderless, and I don't know where I am going, but in the Person of JESUS, is God's Wisdom and God's Knowledge of everything.

We must not be diverted by Satan's persuading that something other than Christ is satisfying. For example, people are looking for revival, that is, an outpouring of the Spirit yet to come. But Peter said, “*But this is that which was spoken by the prophet Joel*” [Acts 2:16]. The Holy Spirit came then, when the Church came into being.

We must not be diverted from the Person by “*the rudiments of the world*” [Colossians 2:8, p.81, v20] that is, the basic rules of living by this world's standards. We have a Person to follow. In This Man “*dwelleth*”, not dwelt, or has dwelt, “*all the fulness of the Godhead bodily*” – all the Power, all the Knowledge, all the Love, all that is to be found in the Father, is to be found in the Person of JESUS. If I were to put my arms around Him, God would say I was putting my arms around everything! This is what made all the difference to the early church – they had Someone Who was the basis of all they believed. The Church is “*the pillar and ground of the truth*” [1 Timothy 3:15] and Christ is the Support and Base of it, and what He is, the Church is also.

**Colossians 3:1 – 2**      “*If ye then be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God. 2. Set your affection on things above, not on things on the earth.*” We are invited and commanded to seek the things in Eternity simply because that is where Christ is seated. Christ fills the Vision of the Church. In all their problems, differences of opinion, and sickness, Christ was their Answer. He is the Person the early church went to.

All my desire, satisfaction, and in all my life, in praise and thanks, and in asking for help, He fills my heart. In turn, I am filled with love for Him, and I go to Him to tell Him how much I love Him.

**Colossians 2:10**      “*And ye are complete in Him, which is the head of all principality and power.*” There is no other authority, or force, or influence, or person to dispute with Christ. He is everything, and now He is locatable as a Man. The God you were looking for as your King, said Peter, you hung on the tree [Acts 2:23, 36, 3:15, 4:10].

**1 Timothy 3:16**      “*And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifest in the flesh, justified in the Spirit, seen of angels, preached unto the Gentiles, believed on in the world, received up into glory.*” Nothing so wonderful has ever been known or will ever be known by men as God manifest in the flesh. The early church was stirred up by this; He was their Life, their All.

## Galatians 5:1

*"Stand fast therefore in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free, and be not entangled again with the yoke of bondage."* We are commanded to stand fast in this Liberty by means of which Christ has made us free. That is : As free from sin, doubt, failure, giving in to the flesh as Christ is, so are the members of His Body. If I am accustomed to speaking the language of Faith as I should be, I will know the Freedom. People can be changed to accomplish my desire, but this is the Liberty in which I have to stand. We are not to shape our life and heart by the world's ways.

## Romans 10:1 – 17

*"Brethren, my heart's desire and prayer to God for Israel is, that they might be saved. 2. For I bear them record that they have a zeal of God, but not according to knowledge. 3. For they being ignorant of God's righteousness, and going about to establish their own righteousness, have not submitted themselves unto the righteousness of God. 4. For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believeth. 5. For Moses describeth the righteousness which is of the law, That the man which doeth those things shall live by them. 6. But the righteousness which is of faith speaketh on*

*this wise, Say not in thine heart, Who shall ascend into heaven? (that is, to bring Christ down from above:) 7. Or, Who shall descend into the deep? that is, to bring up Christ again from the dead.) 8. But what saith it? The word is nigh thee, even in thy mouth, and in thy heart: that is, the word of faith, which we preach; 9. That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised Him from the dead, thou shalt be saved. 10. For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation. 11. For the scripture saith, Whosoever believeth on Him shall not be ashamed.*

*12. For there is no difference between the Jew and the Greek: for the same Lord over all is rich unto all that call upon Him. 13. For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved. 14. How then shall they call on Him in whom they have not believed? and how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear without a preacher? 15. And how shall they preach, except they be sent? as it is written, How beautiful are the feet of them that preach the gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things! 16. But they have not all obeyed the gospel. For Esaias saith, Lord, who hath believed our report? 17. So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God."*

To acknowledge this fact that Christ is the Lord of your life, this physical Person, meaning that you confess openly to this Person's hold on your heart and life, this is Salvation as God has planned it for you. A Christian would have all the Answers if he lived this Way. My life would not be barren by a long series of defeats.

v9 "[C]onfess" – acknowledge that He is in control of the situation. Christ's marred Body – what an impetus to Faith! It is to believe first, and to confess what your heart says, v10. In the Scriptures we find a powerful conviction pressed upon us by the Holy Spirit. Always there is a "but", bringing GOD into the picture : "But we see Jesus" [Hebrews 2:9], "But God..." [Ephesians 2:4]

## 1 Corinthians 1:17 – 21

*"For Christ sent me not to baptize, but to preach the gospel: not with wisdom of words, lest the cross of Christ should be made of none effect. 18. For the preaching of the cross is to them that perish*

*foolishness; but unto us which are saved it is the power of God. 19. For it is written, I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and will bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent. 20. Where is the wise? where is the*

*scribe? where is the disputer of this world? hath not God made foolish the wisdom of this world? 21. For after that in the wisdom of God the world by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God by the foolishness of preaching to save them that believe."*

To preach the Word of God as God understands it to be preached, that is my only business. God will do the work of healing the sick. Not with men's wisdom are we to preach, for that obscures the Vision of the Person of Christ in the life of a Christian. Man's ways and answers will ruin faith.

Compromise is allowing for man's opinion. The early church lived their normal lives mindful not to give the world any place in their lives. In every part of my life God can be the dominating influence, and Christ the deciding factor. Taking the views of the world is deadly and causes conflict in the Christian.

In the book of *Job*, we see that Job was a self-righteous man. He knew God was holy and a Provider, and he had no intention of doing wrong. God said that Job always does what I tell him, but Job hadn't got the Vision of the Person of God as revealed to us in Christ. We'll see how his controversy with God ended :

As Job sought to justify himself, God stayed silent – He let him ramble on. Job found the answer to his situation in himself, in that it was an unsatisfactory business; he found he did nothing wrong. I can be as right as God wants me to be, but when I see Christ as the Person I should see Him as, I want to love Him more; to do something more for Him – but Job was all right in his own eyes... Our wisdom and knowledge is of the world, but when I am born-again I take the Knowledge of Heaven.

Job and his friends were living by their wisdom and knowledge of God, but God gave Job a good look at His wonderful Person. That is what we need to see and to have our ears trained to hear God's Knowledge and our eyes looking for the Vision...

Job said, *"I know Thou canst do every thing..."* [Job 42:2]. Now he saw everything because he saw Christ. What God had to say Job was deafened to by his own words and views. A man who sees God as He is, does not cringe. Job said, *"Hear, I beseech Thee, and I will speak: I will demand of Thee, and declare Thou unto me. I have heard of Thee by the hearing of the ear: but now mine eye seeth Thee. Wherefore I abhor myself, and repent in dust and ashes"* [Job 42:4 – 6]. This must also be my experience. Once I have come to that place of seeing JESUS, I must not move from that. In all the sorrows of this world, I have the Answer.

The Jews were ignorant of God's Way because they would not see it in the Person of Jesus. I should have that steadfastness in me, for I have Christ in me – **the Fulness of the Godhead Bodily**. I don't need to be resigned to enduring grimly for I have the Answers; I endure with confidence and purpose in my heart and life. I may be in the position where God has not seen fit to resolve my case, but even in this I can dispense God's Blessing all around.

### 1 Corinthians 1:2

*"Unto the church of God which is at Corinth, to them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus, called to be saints, with all that in every place call upon the name of Jesus Christ our Lord, both theirs and ours."* The early church everywhere relied wholly upon

this Person. I need to know in my heart of a certainty that you in your home are calling on the name of the Lord in each situation, and for our nation, etc... We are all tried by the same tempter, but he will have to pay for every one of his temptations – he will eat the dust in the Lake of Fire. He has endeavoured to pollute God's people and plans, but God knows how far He can let him go. Don't give him room – he is not able to spoil God's Plans. Let Christ handle him. Christ is in control, not Satan.

*"[C]alled to be saints"* – a living reality, a holy person, pure, separated unto God, unworldly, sanctified, living here in the power of the Spirit. I ought to be encouraged when I am in trouble to know that others of like faith call upon Christ in their temptations.

### Galatians 6:14

*"But God forbid that I should glory, save in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world."* These words are

written to the Church, which alone recognises the Work of Christ as relevant to the world's needs.

The Work of Christ is recognised only by the Church as relevant to the needs of this generation. Christ Jesus is the only Way. Christ Crucified. I haven't got an answer outside of Christ Crucified to the world, because the world is crucified to me – it doesn't exist, in other words!

Christ Crucified is the Answer to everybody, everything in the world. It is very comforting to know that there are saints, people who will give God's Answers from His Word to people. The Cross – that Work – is the only Solution, Answer. We must repair to Calvary!

### **Philippians 2:9 – 16**

*"Wherefore God also hath highly exalted Him, and given Him a name which is above every name: 10. That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth; 11. And that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father. 12. Wherefore, my beloved, as ye have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling. 13. For it is God which worketh in you both to will and to do of His good pleasure. 14. Do all things without murmurings and disputings: 15. That ye may be blameless and harmless, the sons of God, without rebuke, in the midst of a crooked and perverse nation, among whom ye shine as lights in the world; 16. Holding forth the word of life; that I may rejoice in the day of Christ, that I have not run in vain, neither laboured in vain."*

God is determined that everyone everywhere must acknowledge that This Person called JESUS has supreme Authority : they don't need to go anywhere else for help. We will always know what Love is, because we know that Name which is above every name. Do not confess any other name, even the name of fear – confess CHRIST. Every living creature is under that supreme Authority.

Christ said in the Garden of Gethsemane, 'I can receive legions of angels to help Me' [Matthew 26:53 – 54]. In other words, He was saying, 'My Word kept them there in the Heavens; otherwise they would have been here'.

### **Matthew 8:23 – 24**

*"And when He was entered into a ship, His disciples followed Him. 24. And, behold, there arose a great tempest in the sea, insomuch that the ship was covered with the waves: but He was asleep."* It is a sin to be afraid even in contemplating This

Person, let alone in His very Presence! The fearful are left out of the holy City [Revelation 21:8].

The whole Godhead dwelt Bodily in Christ – and the devils [vs28 – 32] said, "*art Thou come hither to torment us before the time?*", calling Him the Son of God; and all men saw was a poorly dressed Man. The devils recognised Him and believed it was He. What more must we be; we must love Him as well as believe Who He is. "*What manner of man is this!*" [v27] is not a nice saying; it was said through unbelief. Every devil trembles before Him; they admit Who He is – do we?? We should tremble with godly fear.

Doubt and unbelief, not recognising Christ is ingrained in human nature. Don't pretend to love God and seek His help; that is being hypocritical, and will give the devils room to deceive us with the lusts and covetousness of the things of the world. The devils knew Christ was able to cast them out and send them into the swine, and with one Word, "Go" [v32] they went.

We need "*faith which worketh by love*" [Galatians 5:6b], then we will be able to cast out the demons and sickness that presume to invade our bodies.

God is determined that we shall acknowledge that This Person's Authority is supreme everywhere.

**Colossians 2:13 – 15**

*“And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath He quickened together with Him, having forgiven you all trespasses; 14. Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to His cross; 15. And having spoiled principalities and powers, He made a shew of them openly triumphing over them in it.” “[S]poiled” –*

Christ robbed them of all their power and scope to seduce me to do wrong, on the Cross. To survive I must concentrate on Christ. *“A little leaven leaveneth the whole lump”* [Galatians 5:9] – any little thing that comes between me and Christ will ultimately destroy me. I must have no other drawing power.

**The Authority Over All****1 Peter 3:18 – 22**

*“For Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust, that He might bring us to God, being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit: 19. By which also He went and preached unto the spirits in prison; 20. Which*

*sometime were disobedient, when once the longsuffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was a preparing, wherein few, that is, eight souls were saved by water. 21. The like figure whereunto even baptism doth also now save us (not the putting away*

*of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience toward God,) by the resurrection of Jesus Christ: 22. Who is gone into heaven, and is on the right hand of God; angels and authorities and powers being made subject unto Him.”*

Christ preached to those spirits in prison, to show them that they had fatally rejected Christ out of their lives; He had not been First to them.

**Ephesians 4:4 – 8**

*“There is one body, and one Spirit, even as ye are called in one hope of your calling; 5. One Lord, one faith, one baptism, 6.*

*One God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in you all. 7. But unto every one of us is given grace according to the*

*measure of the gift of Christ. 8. Wherefore He saith, When He ascended up on high, He led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men.”*

Christ is the Giver of faith and of the Holy Ghost. He knows how far I can be taken. Every place is open to Christ. He went into Hell and also took the keys with Him [Revelation 1:18].

**vs11 – 13**

*“And He gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some evangelists; and some pastors and teachers; 12. For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ: 13. Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ.”* Under Christ there is no one over me – He is my only

Authority. Under Him for the order of the Church there are apostles, teachers etc, but only as they use Christ's Authority.

**Colossians 1:15 – 18**

*“Who is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of every creature: 16. For by Him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth,*

*visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by Him, and for Him: 17. And He is before all things, and*

*by Him all things consist. 18. And He is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead; that in all things He might have the preeminence.”*

In Christ is vested the supreme Authority of all the Universe. There is no provision in the Scriptures where a local church is under a larger body, but only under a God-ordained man of the local church.

**Revelation 1:12 – 13**

*"And I turned to see the voice that spake with me. And being turned, I saw seven golden candlesticks; 13. And in the midst of the seven candlesticks one like unto the Son of man clothed with a garment down to the foot, and girt about the paps with a golden girdle." John saw Him in the midst of the candlesticks. Christ is in complete*

control of the Church.

I must be conscious that the Head is in control when coming to a meeting, then I will not criticise the form of service; how it is run, or pray when I want to, but as the Holy Ghost leads. In **Revelation** there are the seven times *"To the angel of the church off/ in ... write..."*. Christ is completely in authority. Christ gave His orders directly to the individual church. John didn't go to the churches and authorise them – he sent them the letters dictated to him by Christ.

**Acts 2:22, 32, 36, 38**

*"Ye men of Israel, hear these words; Jesus of Nazareth, a man approved of God among you by miracles and wonders and signs, which God did by Him in the midst of you, as ye yourselves*

*also know: ... 32. This Jesus hath God raised up, whereof we all are witnesses. ... 36. Therefore let all the house of Israel know assuredly, that God hath made that same Jesus, whom ye have crucified, both*

*Lord and Christ. ... 38. Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost."*

The Supreme Authority of the Person of Christ was felt in their ministry; they served God rather than men. In many churches the deaconate run the church – that is not scriptural. Deacons see to money matters and have a ministry which God ordains, but God's men run the church under Christ, and not a board. We have only the Authority of Christ to go out as a Body, then the ministries in the church will be in evidence.

**Acts 3:6, 13, 18, 26**

*"Then Peter said, Silver and gold have I none; but such as I have give I thee: In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth rise up and walk. ... 13. The God of Abraham, and of Isaac, and of*

*Jacob, the God of our fathers, hath glorified His Son Jesus; whom ye delivered up, and denied Him in the presence of Pilate, when he was determined to let Him go. ... 18. But those things, which God before*

*had shewed by the mouth of all His prophets, that Christ should suffer, He hath so fulfilled. ... 26. Unto you first God, having raised up His Son Jesus, sent Him to bless you, in turning away every one of you from his iniquities."*

**Acts 4:2, 10, 13, 18**

*"Being grieved that they taught the people, and preached through Jesus the resurrection from the dead. ... 10. Be it known unto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of Jesus*

*Christ of Nazareth, whom ye crucified, whom God raised from the dead, even by Him doth this man stand here before you whole. ... 13. Now when they saw the boldness of Peter and John, and*

*perceived that they were unlearned and ignorant men, they marvelled; and they took knowledge of them, that they had been with Jesus. ... 18. And they called them, and commanded them not to speak at all nor to teach in the name of Jesus."*

**vs27, 30, 33**

*"For of a truth against Thy holy child Jesus, whom Thou hast anointed, both Herod, and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles, and the people of Israel, were gathered together, ... 30. By stretching forth Thine hand to heal; and that signs and wonders may be done by the name of Thy holy child Jesus. ... 33. And with great power gave the apostles witness of the resurrection of the Lord Jesus: and great grace was upon them all." Do we*

preach through Jesus; does our preaching have the stamp of that unassailable Authority??

**Acts 5:30, 40, 42**

*“The God of our fathers raised up Jesus, whom ye slew and hanged on a tree. ... 40. And to him [Gamaliel, v34] they agreed: and when they had called the apostles, and beaten them, they commanded that they should not speak in the name of Jesus, and let them go. ... 42. And daily in the temple, and in every house, they ceased not to teach and preach Jesus Christ.”*

If Jesus is preached and the listeners don't mind it but won't repent, then there is no Vision. If people do not want to hear, our preaching Jesus must nevertheless be with authority.

**Acts 7:55, 59**

*“But he, being full of the Holy Ghost, looked up stedfastly into heaven, and saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing on the right hand of God, ... 59. And they stoned Stephen, calling upon God, and saying, Lord Jesus, receive my spirit.”* Everything

we speak should involve His Name; the Person. We should be found disputing the claims of others who want to manage their lives under any other authority.

**Acts 9:5, 17, 29**

*“And he said, Who art Thou, Lord? And the Lord said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest: it is hard for thee to kick against the pricks. ... 17. And Ananias went his way, and entered into the house; and putting his hands on him said, Brother Saul, the Lord, even Jesus, that appeared unto thee in the way as thou camest, hath sent me, that thou mightest receive thy sight, and be filled with the Holy Ghost. ... 29. And he spake boldly in the name of the Lord Jesus, and disputed against the Grecians: but they went about to slay him.”* Paul's first contact with the Gospel as a convert was hearing

Christ say to him, *“I am Jesus”*. His heart was immediately captured by This Person: *“Lord, what wilt Thou have me to do?”* [v6]. It was for no other reason but to bear the Name of Jesus Christ before all the world. My service is irrelevant to God and to all except it is based entirely on my relationship of love for Christ.

**Acts 10:36, 38**

*“The word which God sent unto the children of Israel, preaching peace by Jesus Christ: (He is Lord of all:) ... 38. How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Ghost and with power: who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the devil; for God was with Him.”*

**Acts 11:17, 20**

*“Forasmuch then as God gave them the like gift as He did unto us, who believed on the Lord Jesus Christ; what was I, that I could withstand God? ... 20. And some of them were men of Cyprus and Cyrene, which, when they were come to Antioch, spake unto the Grecians, preaching the Lord Jesus.”*

**Acts 13:23, 33**

*“Of this man's seed hath God according to His promise raised unto Israel a Saviour, Jesus: ... 33. God hath fulfilled the same unto us their children, in that He hath raised up Jesus again; as it is also written in the second psalm, Thou art My Son, this day have I begotten Thee.”*

**Acts 16:18, 31**

*“And this did she many days. But Paul, being grieved, turned and said to the spirit, I command thee in the name of Jesus Christ to come out of her. And he came out the same hour. ... 31. And they said, Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved, and thy house.”* It is the Person of Christ that people must hear about.

**Acts 17:3, 18**

*“Opening and alleging, that Christ must needs have suffered, and risen again from the dead; and that this Jesus, whom I preach unto you, is Christ. ... 18. Then certain philosophers of the Epicureans, and of the Stoicks, encountered him. And some said, What will this babblers say? other some, He seemeth to be a setter forth of strange gods: because he preached unto them Jesus, and the resurrection.”*



**Acts 18:5, 28**

*"And when Silas and Timotheus were come from Macedonia, Paul was pressed in the spirit, and testified to the Jews that Jesus was Christ. ... 28. For he mightily convinced the Jews, and that publickly, shewing by the scriptures that Jesus was Christ."*

**Acts 19:4, 10, 13 – 16, 17**

*"Then said Paul, John verily baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying unto the people, that they should believe on Him which should come after him, that is, on Christ Jesus. ... 10. And this continued by the space of two years; so that all they which dwelt in Asia heard the word of the Lord Jesus, both*

*Jews and Greeks. ... 13. Then certain of the vagabond Jews, exorcists, took upon them to call over them which had evil spirits the name of the Lord Jesus, saying, We adjure you by Jesus whom Paul preacheth. 14. And there were seven sons of one Sceva, a Jew, and chief of the priests, which did so. 15. And the evil spirit answered and said,*

*Jesus I know, and Paul I know; but who are ye? 16. And the man in whom the evil spirit was leaped on them, and overcame them, and prevailed against them, so that they fled out of that house naked and wounded. 17. And this was known to all the Jews and Greeks also dwelling at Ephesus; and fear fell on them all, and the name of the Lord Jesus was magnified."*

**Acts 20:21, 24, 35**

*"Testifying both to the Jews, and also to the Greeks, repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ. ... 24. But none of these things move me, neither count I my life dear unto myself, so that I might finish my course with joy, and the ministry, which I have received of the Lord Jesus, to testify the gospel of the grace of God. ... 35. I have shewed you all things, how that so labouring ye ought to support the weak, and to remember the words of the Lord Jesus, how He said, It is more blessed to give than to receive."*

**Acts 21:13**

*"Then Paul answered, What mean ye to weep and to break mine heart? for I am ready not to be bound only, but also to die at Jerusalem for the name of the Lord Jesus."*

**Acts 22:8**

*"And I answered, Who art Thou, Lord? And He said unto me, I am Jesus of Nazareth, whom thou persecutest."*

**Acts 26:15**

*"And I said, who art Thou, Lord? And He said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest."*

**Acts 28:23**

*"And when they had appointed him a day, there came many to him into his lodging; to whom he expounded and testified the kingdom of God, persuading them concerning Jesus, both out of the law of Moses, and out of the prophets, from morning till evening." Note how Paul taught : "persuading them **concerning Jesus**". My*

ministry must not be on the process of obedience and salvation but of **the proclaiming of the Person**. Their ministry was the Authority with which they confessed Jesus Christ.

### Commanded To Consider Him

**Hebrews 3:1**

*"Wherefore, holy brethren, partakers of the heavenly calling, consider the Apostle and High Priest of our profession, Christ Jesus."* We as the Church of God are

commanded to observe fully, perceive with the eyes of the heart made clean in God's sight, This Person.

**Hebrews 7:4**

*"Now consider how great this man was, unto whom even the patriarch Abraham gave the tenth of the spoils."* We are commanded to consider now how great This

Man was!

**Hebrews 12:3**

*"For consider Him that endured such contradiction of sinners against Himself, lest ye be wearied and faint in your minds."* We are commanded to consider how He endured such contradiction of sinners.

Consider the **Apostle** : Christ is now the only Apostle, sent directly from God on a Mission; God authorised Him. Obedience to God's Word is my only means of exercising God's Authority.

**John 17:8, 18, 21, 23, 25**

*"For I have given them the words which Thou gavest Me; and they have received them, and have known surely that I came out from Thee, and they have believed that Thou didst send Me. ... 18. As Thou hast sent Me into the world, even so have I also sent them into the world. ... 21. That they all may be one; as Thou, Father, art in Me, and I in Thee, that they also may be one in Us: that the world may believe that Thou hast sent Me. ... 23. I in them, and Thou in Me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that Thou hast sent Me, and hast loved them, as Thou hast loved Me. ... 25. O righteous Father, the world hath not known Thee: but I have known Thee, and these have known that Thou hast sent Me."*

God sent Him. My mission is to show the Authority of God, vested in Christ and passed on through me. No other method than God's must be used. Call men to Christ and to repentance of not having Christ in their lives.

**Hebrews 5:1 - 4**

*"For every high priest taken from among men is ordained for men in things pertaining to God, that he may offer both gifts and sacrifices for sins: 2. Who can have compassion on the ignorant, and on them that are out of the way; for that he himself also is compassed with infirmity. 3. And by reason hereof he ought, as for the people, so also for himself, to offer for sins. 4. And no man taketh this honour unto himself, but he that is called of God, as was Aaron."*

These are the qualifications of a High Priest. He was called of God; He called not Himself Melchisedec – a Man completely supreme in His Authority. He is revealed as Christ in the New Testament. There was nobody over Him – what Power! Someone who can't look back far enough to see His beginning! There was no Beginning! This is the Authority I am vested with...

I ought to expect repentance from those I preach to in this Authority. By God's Spirit I should cause a change in a man's life. Paul did the suffering; Christ did the healing. The thorn in his flesh didn't reduce Christ's Authority in Paul; it reduced the self in Paul! I don't need self. Self must go; Christ must be supreme. What I say of Christ is lost without His Authority in what I say. I can't convict anyone of sin with my authority. I can make Christ known with His Authority which is not pitted against sinners, but vested in me against principalities, the powers of darkness [Ephesians 6:12].

**1 Corinthians 11:29 - 30** *"For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh damnation to himself, not discerning the Lord's body. 30. For this cause many are weak and sickly among you, and many sleep."* I must perceive the Person of Christ, the Object of all my love and worship.

If we do not perceive the Authority we have we are therefore unable to exercise that Authority, in not observing that it is Christ's Authority, and so the members of God's Church are overcome by self... God has one Aim : that every member should see this wonderful Person face to Face in the flesh!

If I also have that one Vision, I will have that Authority.

Like Paul, we must push opposition aside and press toward the Mark. If Christ captivates me, all my speaking will be of God. We need this in our local churches. Our communal worship must be free and full, and not dominated by self expression. We all have the same power; we are all in Christ's Body, so we must let that Person, that Authority dominate us. In *Acts* [4:29] they even asked for that boldness to preach the Word.

We must put Christ back where He belongs, and, with every member knowing these things, we shall all be invigorated.

*“Paul, a servant of Jesus Christ, called to be an apostle, separated unto the gospel of God, 2. (Which He had promised afore by His prophets in the holy scriptures,) 3. Concerning His Son Jesus Christ our Lord, which was made of the seed of David according to the flesh; 4. And declared to be the Son of God with power, according to the spirit of holiness, by the resurrection from the dead: 5. By whom we have received grace and apostleship, for obedience to the faith among all nations, for His name: 6. Among whom are ye also the called of Jesus Christ: 7. To all that be in Rome, beloved of God, called to be saints: Grace to you and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.”*

It is This Person who calls me to be a member of His Church, His Body. Christ is the Head of the Church; He has called me Himself. It is called the Church of God because the Head is **God manifest in the flesh**, and therefore requires my instant submission and obedience.

*"By whom also we have access  
by faith into this grace wherein  
we stand, and rejoyce in hope of  
the glory of God. 3. And not only  
so, but we glory in tribulations  
also; knowing that tribulation  
worketh patience; 4. And patience,  
experience; and experience, hope: 5.  
And hope maketh not ashamed; because  
the love of God is shed abroad in our  
hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given  
unto us."*

How can I know these things, patience working experience, experience working hope, etc?? **This is how:** by being absorbed in This Wonderful Person!! Absorbed in JESUS, I know that experience will work hope and that hope makes not ashamed because inside of me the Holy Spirit has filled me with love for Christ. It is a total love; **all** my love will be for Him, with **all** my heart and soul and mind and strength!!

v11 *"And not only so, but we also joy in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we have now received the atonement."* My sheer excited pleasure in God is only possible in so far that I am absorbed in Jesus Christ.

**1 Corinthians 10:11**      *“Now all these things happened unto them for ensamples: and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the world are come.”*

*"[T]he ends of the world* - God cannot and will not provide anything more for my Eternal Salvation. Beyond Christ there is no further Message from God, and no other Salvation.

## THE CONCLUSION OF OUR MEDITATION ON “CONCENTRATED ON CHRIST”

All opposition against God is a confrontation with JESUS. Our authority is dependent on our relationship with Christ.

1. Self must go completely from my life, that the Person of Jesus must now preoccupy all my thinking.

**Colossians 3:11**      *“Where there is neither Greek nor Jew, circumcision nor uncircumcision, Barbarian, Scythian, bond nor free: but Christ is all, and in all.”* A joyful preoccupation. All that I do is because of Christ.

2. I must become humble to be willing to decide that my own thinking and my own desires must be got rid of, in order to hear God’s Message to me.

**Philippians 2:5 – 8**      *“Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus: 6. Who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God: 7. But made Himself of no reputation, and took upon Him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men: 8. And being found in fashion as a man, He humbled Himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross.”*

**Philippians 3:7 – 8**      *“But what things were gain to me, those I counted loss for Christ. 8. Yea doubtless, and I count all things but loss for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them but dung, that I may win Christ.”*

The standard by which I can assess my humility is that I am willing to accept God’s Way always. To always be repentant requires humility.

3. I must be completely willing to let all my own ideas and my own thoughts be superseded completely by God’s ideas and thoughts as expressed in His Word. What I think is an offensive mess in comparison with God’s thoughts. To have the Authority of Christ Crucified, I must have Christ Crucified in my life.

## Day 8 – Controlled by the Spirit

**Acts 13:51 – 52**

"But they shook off the dust of their feet against them, and came unto Iconium. **52.** And the disciples were filled with joy and with the Holy Ghost."

### Living in The Holy Ghost

To be filled with the Joy of Salvation is to be filled with the Holy Ghost, Who only can and does reveal the Source of Joy – Christ Crucified. The Church of God is controlled by the Holy Spirit.

**Romans 8:14**

*"For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God."* To be a child of God, Who is a Spirit, my life must be a spiritual life, governed entirely by the Spirit of God.

**John 4:23 – 24**

*"But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeks such to worship Him. **24.** God is a Spirit: and they that worship Him must worship Him in spirit and in truth."* True worshippers, the Church of God, are those born again and seeing that God is a Spirit, and that a life governed by fleshly desires cannot and will not make contact with Him. No flesh shall glory in God's Presence [1 Corinthians 1:29]. Praying must be by the Spirit and in truth.

**Romans 8:5**

*"For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit."* To live a life governed by my own, or man's, or the world's desires, will only end in death – eternal torment of unquenchable stink. To live a life controlled by the desires and dictates of the Spirit is to live with God forever. Is my life minded by the Spirit??

**Micah 6:1 – 8**

*"Hear ye now what the LORD saith; Arise, contend thou before the mountains, and let the hills hear thy voice. **2.** Hear ye, O mountains, the LORD'S controversy, and ye strong foundations of the earth: for the LORD hath a controversy with His people, and He will plead with Israel. **3.** O My people, what have I done unto thee? and wherein have I wearied thee? testify against Me. **4.** For I*

*brought thee up out of the land of Egypt, and redeemed thee out of the house of servants; and I sent before thee Moses, Aaron, and Miriam. **5.** O My people, remember now what Balak king of Moab consulted, and what Balaam the son of Beor answered him from Shittim unto Gilgal; that ye may know the righteousness of the LORD. **6.** Wherewith shall I come before the LORD, and bow myself before the high God?*

*shall I come before Him with burnt offerings, with calves of a year old? **7.** Will the LORD be pleased with thousands of rams, or with ten thousands of rivers of oil? shall I give my firstborn for my transgression, the fruit of my body for the sin of my soul? **8.** He hath shewed thee, O man, what is good; and what doth the LORD require of thee, but to do justly, and to love mercy, and to walk humbly with thy God?"*

To live, or to try to live, without being under the control of the Spirit, is to find the Lord having a controversy with us. These people were following their own plans. God requires us to do these things – to "**do justly**" (live obediently), to "**love mercy**" and to "**walk humbly**" with our God. I can't walk humbly with God except I acquire it by walking by the Spirit of God.

**Genesis 5:22 – 24**

*“And Enoch walked with God after he begat Methuselah three hundred years, and begat sons and daughters: 23. And all the days of Enoch were three hundred sixty and five years: 24. And Enoch walked with God: and he was not; for God took him.”* May

Enoch’s experience be mine! Perhaps our experience has been Enoch’s life before he walked with God... Have I walked with God – every day – do I always consult Him? Walking with God must be by the Spirit – it is not just speaking in tongues. When I finally go, I won’t need tongues, only Christ and God.

**Hebrews 11:5**

*“By faith Enoch was translated that he should not see death; and was not found, because God had translated him: for before his translation he had this testimony, that he pleased God.”* I can only please God by following the dictates of the Holy Spirit,

and not my own. It demands leaving aside the things of the flesh to walk by the Spirit.

**Jude 14**

*“And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of His saints.”* If we would be raptured, we must be

living in the Spirit and walking in the Spirit. I must be living it in my home, my bedroom, on the street, in the office, in my heart – from which come all *“the issues of life”* [Proverbs 4:23] – living the Life of God. The Holy Spirit must have possession of that vital organ, my heart.

**Genesis 2:7**

*“And the LORD God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul.”* In the beginning man’s

life was governed by the Spirit. God breathed into man the breath of life; His Spirit did the work.

**Job 33:4**

*“The Spirit of God hath made me, and the breath of the Almighty hath given me life.”*

The Breath of Life is the Holy Spirit.

**John 20:21 – 22**

*“Then said Jesus to them again, Peace be unto you: as my Father hath sent Me, even so send I you. 22. And when He had said this, He breathed on them, and saith unto them, Receive ye the Holy Ghost.”* And at Pentecost the Holy Ghost breathed into them

the Breath of Life. It is the Spirit that gives me Life.

**Genesis 1:1 – 3**

*“In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth. 2. And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters. 3. And God said, Let there be light: and there was light.”* Where the Spirit of God is, there is God’s Word. I must let the Spirit

have right of way in my life. There may be in someone’s heart darkness, no form, no purpose; it is empty and meaningless – well, may God move upon the face of those waters and be able to create light there...

Now, when sin entered, something else was given to men to enable them to live their lives in the flesh :

**Genesis 3:16 – 19**

<p><i>“Unto the woman He said, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception; in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children; and thy desire shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee. 17. And unto Adam He</i></p>	<p><i>said, Because thou hast hearkened unto the voice of thy wife, and hast eaten of the tree, of which I commanded thee, saying, Thou shalt not eat of it: cursed is the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life;</i></p>	<p><i>18. Thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to thee; and thou shalt eat the herb of the field; 19. In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it thou wast taken: for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return.”</i></p>
------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------

This was man’s condition after he had taken his own life into his own hands and out of God’s – *“and unto dust shalt thou return”*. I may see that only by the Spirit of God can this dust survive – and be more than dust. Is my life just dust? By God’s Spirit only can I live, or I will not make it when the Trumpet sounds...

So, in God's Wisdom and Mercy and with His heart's eye on Calvary, God gave man something else to live by here. He says in **Leviticus 17:11** "*For the life of the flesh is in the blood.*" So man entered upon a life of flesh and blood without God's Spirit. Now they had to make the effort to contact God. God was available, but man was no longer aware of Him. Man of flesh and blood now did not find it easy to contact God – it meant an effort. I need the Spirit of God.

### 1 Timothy 4:1 – 3

*"Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils; 2. Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron; 3. Forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from meats, which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving of them which believe and know the truth."* Perhaps we need the Spirit in

these days even more than in previous times... Christ came as a Man of flesh and blood – the sign of separation from God, of man's sin. Christ came exactly like Adam and me. In place of the Spirit of God, man had flesh and blood, and because of that, I need to have the Spirit of God in me or else I am lost.

Christ's Death was for this Reason : 1) that I may overcome the difficulties of contacting God through flesh and blood, and 2) that He may be able to pour out the Spirit upon all flesh. It does not mean that because Christ died [without rising from the dead] I can enter in, but because He has given me a new Life of total submission to the Spirit and God's Word. As **Hebrews 10:19** says, "*Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holiest by the blood of Jesus.*"

### 1 John 5:3 – 6

*"For this is the love of God, that we keep His commandments: and His commandments are not grievous. 4. For whatsoever is born of God overcometh the*

*world: and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith. 5. Who is he that overcometh the world, but he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God?*

*6. This is He that came by water and blood, even Jesus Christ; not by water only, but by water and blood. And it is the Spirit that beareth witness, because the Spirit is truth."*

He came as Adam should have come – by obedience. He poured His Blood out for my sin. He provided God with the Price, unequalled Suffering, and so I have God's Spirit. With the shed Blood I am offered the Fulness of the Spirit, a Life governed by the Holy Spirit; a Life with God – pleasing to God, as Enoch's was.

### Romans 8:1 – 13

*"There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. 2. For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death. 3. For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending His own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh: 4. That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who*

*walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. 5. For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit. 6. For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. 7. Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be. 8. So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God. 9. But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you.*

*Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of His. 10. And if Christ be in you, the body is dead because of sin; but the Spirit is life because of righteousness. 11. But if the Spirit of Him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, He that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by His Spirit that dwelleth in you. 12. Therefore, brethren, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh. 13. For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live."*

This passage in *Romans 8* is a picture of life on earth controlled by the Spirit. The Blood of the Cross has enabled God to give me His Spirit. The Gift of God is Eternal Life in Christ by the Spirit. If I have the Spirit of God, I will be living the Life of God. *“For the law of the Spirit of life”, v2* – The Holy Spirit is teaching and telling men from Adam’s disobedience that *“it is not in man that walketh to direct his steps”* [Jeremiah 10:23b]. The Spirit must fill me every day. Even Christ lived under the complete control of the Holy Ghost. The way to see Christ is to be filled every day with the Holy Spirit. *“[T]he law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus”* – He was full of God’s Spirit and full of God’s Word. This tells me that I can’t live God’s Life without the Spirit. I am made free from the law of sin in my members, so that I can be doing all my daily activities in the Energy of the Holy Spirit, as well as live eternally.

### Flesh and Blood

Any leadings from the flesh is only to sin, so Paul lived by the Spirit of God – *“I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave Himself for me”*, he said [Galatians 2:20]. God removed as it were the Law from the Books and put it into Christ! – *“the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus”*.

My mind is not under God’s control or is able to keep God’s Law whilst being in opposition to God. That is why I need the Spirit, to enable me to keep God’s Laws. When I am acting by the way of the flesh, God is not pleased, and therefore I am in a dangerous position. The Spirit of Christ shows me Christ – only the Holy Spirit can. *“[I]f so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you”* – in my life, guiding, teaching, controlling, dealing successfully with the flesh in my life and enabling me to live for God. Is God’s Spirit dwelling in me? Do I meet everything with God’s Spirit; am I found walking with God still after every crisis? When I walk, I progress; I don’t just stamp my feet up and down on the same spot! and so walking with God, I progress spiritually. Jesus Christ Himself was controlled by the same Spirit.

**Isaiah 42:1**                      *“Behold My servant, whom I uphold; Mine elect, in whom My soul delighteth; I have put My Spirit upon Him: He shall bring forth judgment to the Gentiles.”* The Spirit was upon Christ because He was made flesh; He was in a human Body.

**Isaiah 48:16**                      *“Come ye near unto Me, hear ye this; I have not spoken in secret from the beginning; from the time that it was, there am I: and now the Lord GOD, and His Spirit, hath sent Me.”* It is Christ speaking; the Word from the beginning. Humility says ‘the Spirit has sent Me’. I must be filled with the Holy Ghost!

**Luke 4:1**                      *“And Jesus being full of the Holy Ghost returned from Jordan, and was led by the Spirit into the wilderness.”* Unless I am full of the Holy Ghost, I cannot be led of the Holy Ghost. I cannot be partly filled... If I have other things in my life, the Holy Spirit is not filling me. He wants to be the sole Resident in the temple.

**v14**                      *“And Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit into Galilee: and there went out a fame of Him through all the region round about.”* After His temptations, He was still full of the Holy Ghost.

**Mark 1:11 – 12**                      *“And there came a voice from heaven, saying, Thou art My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased. 12. And immediately the Spirit driveth Him into the wilderness.”* He was driven by the Spirit – this was part of His Sufferings.



**Romans 1:4** *"And declared to be the Son of God with power, according to the Spirit of holiness, by the resurrection from the dead." If I cannot see to obey, then I am lost...*

**1 Timothy 3:16** *"And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifest in the flesh, justified in the Spirit, seen of angels, preached unto the Gentiles, believed on in the world, received up into glory." Christ was only prepared to be the vehicle of Salvation, to pay the Price, by following the Spirit.*

**Hebrews 1:9** *"Thou hast loved righteousness, and hated iniquity; therefore God, even Thy God, hath anointed Thee with the oil of gladness above Thy fellows." We could take this as a similar story to Christ's servant Paul who said, 'I find the flesh hateful, but through Christ I have the Victory'. Through Christ he was able to be filled with the Spirit and obey God. [As Romans 7, vs24 – 25] So with Christ, because He hated iniquity, He kept the flesh under; He was filled with the Holy Ghost.*

I cannot live without being filled with the Holy Ghost. If Christ needed to be, so must His Body, the Church. I must be filled – and stay filled, and then I will always be found doing what God wants, in the way He wants, cheerfully. We are not filled with the Spirit to live a carnal life.

#### **Acts 1:4 – 8**

*"And, being assembled together with them, commanded them that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the promise of the Father, which, saith He, ye have heard of Me. 5. For John truly baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost not many days hence. 6. When they therefore were come together, they asked of Him, saying, Lord, wilt Thou at this time restore again the kingdom to Israel? 7. And He said unto them, It is not for you to know the times or the seasons, which the Father hath put in His own power. 8. But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto Me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth."*

Christ was intent on this one thing, that they should be filled with the Holy Ghost. Of what purpose is it to wait for Christ's Return if I am not filled with the Holy Ghost, and not be ready for that Return?? It is like as **Amos** said in 5:18 – 19 :

*"Woe unto you that desire the day of the LORD! to what end is it for you? the day of the LORD is darkness, and not light. 19. As if a man did flee from a lion, and a bear met him; or went into his house, and leaned his hand on the wall, and a serpent bit him."*

"[Y]e shall be witnesses unto Me" – 'My Church, when I am gone, will go out to witness Who I am'. They will show His terrible Obedience and Humility. How can this be done, except by God's Spirit..?

**Ephesians 4:30** *"And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption." When a person has been Baptised with the Holy Ghost, he is stamped as belonging to God. In my life, do I live like that? asking, 'Is this the way, Lord?' The Holy Spirit is gentle, for He is witnessing through us to the gentleness of our wounded God...*

**1 Thessalonians 5:19** *"Quench not the Spirit." Quite surely, He is gentle...*

**1 Corinthians 12:13** *"For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body, whether we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free; and have been all made to drink into one Spirit."*

Thousands confess the Name of Jesus Christ, but not the same Jesus which is revealed by the Holy Ghost... That disfigured Man Who is to rule my life; the One the Spirit directs me to call Lord.

**Acts 9** is the account of Saul of Tarsus, “breathing out threatenings and slaughter against the disciples of the Lord”, *vs1*, wonderfully converted, baptised in water, filled with the Holy Ghost, *vs17 & 18*, and immediately preaching Christ as the Son of God, *vs20, 22, 27 & 29* and being persecuted and shunned himself, *vs23, 24, 26, & 29*. The Humility of Christ is revealed to those who come by the Spirit, having answered His Call to be humble. I am being led by the Holy Ghost into Eternal Life, where there is the most unspeakably lovely sight – Jesus Christ!

**John 1:13** “Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.” I am a spiritual person if I am born again. **John 1** and **3** relate the new birth, *3:1 – 21* being His night meeting with Nicodemus. It is not by the flesh – it is not man’s will that I should have the Life of God in me – but it is of God. It is not an incident of one day, but for Eternity. I am not to be under man’s control, or my own control, but under the Spirit’s control.

**Acts 2:4** “And they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance.” Their very words were controlled by the Holy Ghost. The early church, that section at least, lived under the direct control of the Holy Ghost – as shown in the Book of **Acts**. I must have the Spirit’s ability to discern that it is God’s Word that is being spoken...

**Revelation 2 & 3** are Christ’s letters to the individual churches, dictated to John...

### **Galatians 3:3 – 7**

“Are ye so foolish? having begun in the Spirit, are ye now made perfect by the flesh? 4. Have ye suffered so many things in vain? if it be yet in vain. 5. He therefore that ministereth to you the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you, doeth He it by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith? 6. Even as Abraham believed God, and it was accounted to him for righteousness. 7. Know ye therefore that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham.”

**vs13 -14** “Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree: 14. That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ; that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith.” They had to resort to their own ways because they had moved away from the Spirit of God.

### **Galatians 5:16 – 26**

“This I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh. 17. For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would. 18. But if ye be led of the Spirit, ye are not under the law. 19. Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, 20. Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, 21. Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God. 22. But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, 23. Meekness, temperance: against such there is no law. 24. And they that are Christ’s have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts. 25. If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit. 26. Let us not be desirous of vain glory, provoking one another, envying one another.”

The Spirit of God has completely different desires from mine. If I believed that, I would consult God as to whether my desires are the desires of the Spirit. My life is paralysed by the battling between the Spirit and the flesh. If I allow the Spirit to have place in my life, there is still a battle – but it is a victorious one!

Where Paul says, "*so that ye cannot do the things that ye would*", **v17**, it means, only because you do not give place to the Spirit.

He speaks of "*the fruit*" of the Spirit – I cannot separate those Qualities; it is **one Spirit**. I cannot have Love without Joy, or Peace without Longsuffering. If I am filled with the Holy Ghost, controlled by Him, I must show the whole fruit; all the Qualities. God puts it in; I must work it out as it is demanded of me.

### Submitting to the Spirit's Control

Because Christ was sinless in His Nature, the proof of His sinlessness was His complete submission to the Holy Spirit of God.

**1 John 3:24**                      "*And he that keepeth His commandments dwelleth in Him, and He in him. And hereby we know that He abideth in us, by the Spirit which He hath given us.*" If you are keeping God's commandments, you are controlled by the Holy Ghost.

**Ephesians 2:16 – 18**                      "*And that He might reconcile both unto God in one body by the cross, having slain the enmity thereby: 17. And came and preached peace to you which were far off, and to them that were nigh. 18. For through Him we both have access by one Spirit unto the Father.*" To enter the Holiest by the Blood of Christ, I must enter by the Spirit. I need God's Spirit to have the boldness to enter! The Spirit of God is the Energy of God in action. Only by the Spirit will Christ have His Church.

**Ephesians 3:16**                      "*That He would grant you, according to the riches of His glory, to be strengthened with might by His Spirit in the inner man.*" You cannot keep the Commandments of God, Who is Eternal Life, without the Eternal Spirit! Only the Spirit of God can strengthen you. We must pray for the churches we are in to be filled with the Holy Spirit...

**Ephesians 4:13 – 15**                      "*Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ: 14. That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive; 15. But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into Him in all things, which is the head, even Christ.*" We must have the Mind of Christ; the Mind of a Person submitted to the direct control of the Holy Spirit. We all must have the view of Christ that the Holy Spirit has. It is the Revelation of the Holy Spirit that we must listen to. The whole Church must have the Holy Spirit's View. The Value the Holy Ghost has on obedience, I must have. The Holy Spirit doesn't see any safety in tomorrow for me, it is **Today**. There is only one Body in which He operates – the Church of God. There is only one Calling to which I am called – to live with Christ Jesus.

**Ephesians 5:18 – 19**                      "*And be not drunk with wine, wherein is excess; but be filled with the Spirit; 19. Speaking to yourselves in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing and making melody in your heart to the Lord.*" Don't be overcome by wine – or any other thing that can overcome us – but certainly be under the control of the Spirit...

**Ephesians 6:17**                      "*And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God.*"

*"[T]he sword of the Spirit";* the Word of God here used to destroy man's enemies – principalities in high places. The Word becomes a sword in the hands of the Spirit. If you are filled with God's Spirit then you will speak to destroy back-sliding in the heart.

**v18** *"Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints."* Every word of prayer that I utter must be directed by the Holy Ghost. His Word will heal me. Peter slept on the night of his supposed execution, because he was filled with the Spirit! Having seen that, the Church of God, to be witnesses unto This Christ, also had to be controlled by that same Holy Spirit.

### How the Holy Spirit Exercises Control

**Ephesians 1:13** *"In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise."*

Every member of the Church of God should be sealed with that Holy Spirit of Promise. It is God's Mark upon me; more real than a scar distinguishes me from someone else. This Mark is the humility to accept God's Word as the Way, as Right. That Holy Spirit is described as the *"earnest of our inheritance"*, **v14**. Only by the Holy Ghost can Eternity become real to me; to conceive the New Life in Eternity; to prepare to live with a married Person; to be prepared for the Revelation of Eternity... Sealed off by the Holy Spirit as being distinctly different from the world...

**2 Corinthians 1:22** *"Who hath also sealed us, and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts."* By the Spirit only am I conscious of Eternity; that the things I see are temporal; of my inheritance in Heaven; conscious that I will be introduced to all the Provision of Eternity.

**2 Corinthians 5:1** *"For we know that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God, an house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens."* The things of Eternity were so real to Paul it was just a question of his being away from Christ, or being with Christ whilst on earth. He wanted a body in which to enjoy the fellowship of Christ and be able to walk about in the Holy City, to see his room and live in it! Some of us find fault with our lives, and our surroundings ... when God has called us through His Son by His Spirit to That Life!!

A person filled with the Holy Ghost is glad to know that he cannot do anything without Christ. No man can take God's Spirit away from me; he can only shut my mouth... For Christ's sake, I don't mind what happens to me; where I live, if I am filled with the Holy Ghost. Paul enjoyed the Presence of Christ, even in a dungeon, after he had been whipped.

When all the disciples prayed with one accord, God shook the place to show that He had accepted their prayer [Acts 4:31]. I'm foolish to the world – but dynamic to God when I am filled with the Holy Ghost!

**Revelation 19:10** *"And I fell at his feet to worship him. And he said unto me, See thou do it not: I am thy fellowservant, and of thy brethren that have the testimony of Jesus: worship God: for the testimony of Jesus is the Spirit of prophecy."* The Spirit of God in a person makes him thankful to God, and removes every trace of trouble. The Evidence – the Witness – to Christ, being God crucified in the flesh, is the Holy Ghost...

**John 14:26**

*"But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in My name, He shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you."*

**John 15:26**

*"But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, He shall testify of Me." "[T]he testimony of Jesus is the Spirit of prophecy."* [Revelation 19:10, p.100] The Testimony, the Evidence, of JESUS comes to us by the filling of the Holy Ghost.

**John 16:13 - 14**

*"Howbeit when He, the Spirit of truth, is come, He will guide you into all truth: for He shall not speak of Himself; but whatsoever He shall hear, that shall He speak: and He will shew you things to come. 14. He shall glorify Me: for He shall receive of Mine, and shall shew it unto you."* The Holy Spirit can contact you only by revealing

Christ. The more I accept the Revelation of Christ, the more I will do what He tells me to do.

**vs8 - 11**

*"And when He is come, He will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment: 9. Of sin, because they believe not on Me; 10. Of righteousness, because I go to My Father, and ye see Me no more; 11. Of judgment, because the prince of this world is judged."* The Spirit reproves the world of sin, of righteousness, of judgment -

through me, so I will not do those things of which I, as being in the Church, reprove the world of. The Church is the Evidence of man's Salvation in each member, in its corporate Body.

The Holy Spirit reproves the world of their indifference to Christ. The world sees there is a Righteousness which the world doesn't know - an attractive life. Do I proclaim an attractive Life? Those early Christians attracted God, for He added to the Church! The Holy Spirit in me is able to show the Reality of the doom of society. It is by these revelations that the Holy Ghost controls the Church.

### The Revealer of Truth

**1 Corinthians 2:7 - 16**

*"But we speak the wisdom of God in a mystery, even the hidden wisdom, which God ordained before the world unto our glory: 8. Which none of the princes of this world knew: for had they known it, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory. 9. But as it is written, Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love Him. 10. But*

*God hath revealed them unto us by His Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God. 11. For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him? even so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God. 12. Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit which is of God; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God. 13. Which things also we speak, not in the*

*words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which the Holy Ghost teacheth; comparing spiritual things with spiritual. 14. But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned. 15. But he that is spiritual judgeth all things, yet he himself is judged of no man. 16. For who hath known the mind of the Lord, that he may instruct Him? But we have the mind of Christ."*

The Mystery is no longer a mystery; the Wisdom no longer hidden, but Paul showed it as such because it had been a Mystery. It is important then that I should have the revealed Word of God if I am to be controlled by the Spirit. I must bow to the Spirit's leading and control. The reason for the Spirit searching the deep things of God is not that He doesn't know them! He knows everything! It is so that He can give them to us in the way that will benefit us most.

I can't find out God's Revelation by praying, but by allowing God's Spirit to fill me. He is the Revealer. I must not seek worldly men for help in a spiritual matter. I cannot prove God's Word through expositions on His Word, but only by the Holy Ghost. We can ask ourselves, for example : 'Does what I have heard help me?' 'Have I received these things spiritually?' The Spirit of God in me gives me the 'Go' or 'Stay'; He tells me whether it is right or wrong. It is only the Holy Ghost in these mixed-up days Who can tell me if it is the Truth or if it is an error. To be filled with the Holy Ghost is to have the Mind of Christ.

**1 John 5:6, 8**

*"This is He that came by water and blood, even Jesus Christ; not by water only, but by water and blood. And it is the Spirit that beareth witness, because the Spirit is truth. 8. And there are three that bear witness in earth, the Spirit, and the water, and the blood: and these three agree in one."* The Holy Spirit is Witness to the true state of

affairs, that all society is doomed except they have Christ.

**1 John 4:1 – 6**

*"Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world. 2. Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God: 3. And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist, whereof ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world. 4. Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them: because greater is He that is in you, than he that is in the world. 5. They are of the world: therefore speak they of the world, and the world heareth them. 6. We are of God: he that knoweth God heareth us; he that is not of God heareth not us. Hereby know we the Spirit of truth, and the spirit of error."* Only by the Spirit will I know who is the true and who is the false prophet.

**Hebrews 10:15**

*"Whereof the Holy Ghost also is a witness to us: for after that He had said before..."*

The Spirit only witnesses that God has put away my sin, that He has written His Word in my heart and in my mind.

**v29**

*"Of how much sorer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden underfoot the Son of God, and hath counted the blood of the covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of grace?"* Where I affect Christ adversely, I affect the Holy Spirit, because the

water [the Word of God] and the Spirit and the Blood agree in one.

The whole Chapter of **2 Corinthians 3** is worthy of intense waiting on God... My complete confidence will be that I can do nothing by myself. It is not by the letter – not by human knowledge – but of the Spirit, and only the Spirit can teach me spiritual things. He doesn't need a place, but a listening ear...

**v6**

*"Who also hath made us able ministers of the new testament; not of the letter, but of the Spirit: for the letter killeth, but the Spirit giveth life."* The letter kills, not only

the giver of it but the recipients also. The effect of God's Message to the Israelites was Moses' face shining, but the effect of God's Message to us by His Spirit is Christ Crucified – the sight of Christ.

**vs7 – 8**

*"But if the ministration of death, written and engraven in stones, was glorious, so that the children of Israel could not stedfastly behold the face of Moses for the glory of his countenance; which glory was to be done away: 8. How shall not the ministration of the Spirit be rather glorious?"*

Whatever has come from God before, all glories have disappeared in This Revelation : that we can be like that Glorious Person, JESUS – by the Holy Spirit! I must turn to the Spirit of God and the veils of self, ambition, personal interest, sorrow... will vanish away!

**Revelation 1:10** *"I was in the Spirit on the Lord's day, and heard behind me a great voice, as of a trumpet." Here is the technique of Salvation. Only under the grip of the Spirit will I see what God wants me to see!*

**Revelation 4:1** *"After this I looked, and, behold, a door was opened in heaven: and the first voice which I heard was as it were of a trumpet talking with me; which said, Come up hither, and I will shew thee things which must be hereafter." Listen to the language; fancy seeing a door opening in Heaven!!*

**Revelation 22:16 – 17** *"I Jesus have sent Mine angel to testify unto you these things in the churches. I am the root and the offspring of David, and the bright and morning star. 17. And the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that heareth say, Come. And let him that is athirst come. And whosoever will, let him take of the water of life freely."*

**vs20 – 21** *"He which testifieth these things saith, Surely I come quickly. Amen. Even so, come, Lord Jesus. 21. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen."*

## THE CONCLUSION OF OUR MEDITATION ON "CONTROLLED BY THE SPIRIT"

The Church of God is controlled by His Spirit. God had wanted it so from the Beginning. The Head of the Church, Jesus, was completely submitted to the Spirit as a Man. The Purpose was to accomplish God's Work of Salvation, and have His Spirit poured out upon all flesh to guide and control the Church.

The Church, in order to witness to their Head, must be submitted to the same control of the Spirit as its Head was. The Holy Spirit exercises and establishes His control over the Church of God by Revelation of Christ.

1. Every desire of each member must be brought to the Judgment of the Spirit in prayer.

**Philippians 4:6 – 7** *"Be careful for nothing; but in every thing by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving let your requests be made known unto God. 7. And the peace of God, which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus." By the Word that I already know, He will bring a Word to my remembrance to show me what is right.*

**Ephesians 6:18** *"Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints."*

2. The constant Revelation of Christ is the Holy Spirit's only Method of establishing control over the members of the Church of God. – as **1 Corinthians 2:9 – 16**, p101, and **Revelation 19:10**, p100, showed.

3. If I am filled with the Holy Spirit, I will reveal immediately the Fruit of the Holy Spirit. The works of the flesh don't have to be cultivated; they are there. They are called "*works*" because it is the result of living a fleshly life. The Holy Spirit is the Fruit and if He is in me, I have the Fruit – all the Qualities of it.

**Galatians 5:22 – 23**      *"But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, 23. Meekness, temperance: against such there is no law."*

-O-O-O-O-O-O-O-O-O-O-



## Day 9 – Communicating with God

### Acts 4:24

"And when they heard that, they lifted up their voice to God with one accord, and said, Lord, Thou art God, which hast made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and all that in them is."

### A Personal God

The Church of God as reported in the Scriptures in the Book of **Acts** were always very conscious of God as a Person separate from Jesus Christ – therefore they approached Him directly.

### Acts 4:24 – 30

*"And when they heard that, they lifted up their voice to God with one accord, and said, Lord, Thou art God, which hast made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and all that in them is: 25. Who by the mouth of Thy servant David hast said, Why did the heathen rage, and the people*

*imagine vain things? 26. The kings of the earth stood up, and the rulers were gathered together against the Lord, and against His Christ. 27. For of a truth against Thy holy child Jesus, whom Thou hast anointed, both Herod, and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles, and the people of Israel, were gathered to-*

*gether, 28. For to do whatsoever Thy hand and Thy counsel determined before to be done. 29. And now, Lord, behold their threatenings: and grant unto Thy servants, that with all boldness they may speak Thy word, 30. By stretching forth Thine hand to heal; and that signs and wonders may be done by the name of Thy holy child Jesus."*

They knew clearly Who to go to, and being conscious of Someone separate from Jesus, and Someone they could approach directly, they were certain of an immediate response to their call. Everyone was conscious that God was an individual, separate Person, and they could contact Him separately. To them, God was in supreme control over everything. What a contrast to modern praying!

- **The Church of God as revealed in Acts was always very conscious of God's personal concern and care for them and their affairs.** They were conscious that God was very much responsible for their well-being at all times. They were acutely aware, by the Holy Spirit, that This Person, God, was on their side in every situation. They came to Him on that basis. It is easy to see the ground for their confidence as they recalled the words of *Psalms 2*, quoting it in *vs25 & 26*.

They were sure, not of themselves, but of God. Christ was another Person to them. They envisaged their God as Supreme. His Will to achieve His Purpose would be carried out, and they were part of that Purpose. The clarity of their appeal sprang from the certainty of the Person they spoke to.

- **The Church of God was always very conscious of the fact that Christ meant a lot to God.** So they were moved always by the Holy Spirit to appeal to God for His Help in the Name of Jesus Christ. Jesus is not God the Father. I cannot pray indiscriminately: I must know to Whom I am praying...

**Because of these Facts**, they were always certain of an Answer to their questions, problems and needs. Not a lot of Christians get up from prayer certain of an answer, and this is due to ignorance of the knowledge of the Holy God. How can I go to live with God if I don't know Him? They were certain always of an effective Answer, some Answer from God to resolve the problem, remove the difficulty.

**Acts 2:11**

*"Cretes and Arabians, we do hear them speak in our tongues the wonderful works of God." God's Church was now set on its course to be set on its matchless*

Foundation.

**v22**

*"Ye men of Israel, hear these words; Jesus of Nazareth, a man approved of God among you by miracles and wonders and signs, which God did by Him in the midst of you, as ye yourselves also know." Jesus of Nazareth **and** God.*

**Acts 3:13**

*"The God of Abraham, and of Isaac, and of Jacob, the God of our fathers, hath glorified His Son Jesus; whom ye delivered up, and denied Him in the presence of Pilate, when he was determined to let Him go."*

**vs18 – 22**

*"But those things, which God before had shewed by the mouth of all His prophets, that Christ should suffer, He hath so fulfilled. 19. Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord; 20. And He shall send Jesus Christ, which before was preached unto you: 21. Whom the heaven must receive until the times of restitution of all things, which God hath spoken by the mouth of all His holy prophets since the world began. 22. For Moses truly said unto the fathers, A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren, like unto me; Him shall ye hear in all things whatsoever He shall say unto you."*

God and Jesus Christ. God is in control of all things, and this Church that knows that His Word is true forever.

**Acts 4:10**

*"Be it known unto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom ye crucified, whom God raised from the dead, even by Him doth this man stand here before you whole."*

**vs19 – 21**

*"But Peter and John answered and said unto them, Whether it be right in the sight of God to hearken unto you more than unto God, judge ye. 20. For we cannot but speak the things which we have seen and heard. 21. So when they had further threatened them, they let them go, finding nothing how they might punish them, because of the people: for all men glorified God for that which was done."*

These verses indicate this Fact, that the Church of God was always conscious that God was **a separate Person** from Jesus Christ, and Whom they could therefore approach directly.

**Acts 5:30**

*"The God of our fathers raised up Jesus, whom ye slew and hanged on a tree." God; their God and our God. If I obey God, I obey Christ. If I believe that Christ is my Saviour, I might well call out to God and get an Answer...*

**Acts 7:55 – 59**

*"But he, being full of the Holy Ghost, looked up stedfastly into heaven, and saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing on the right hand of God, 56. And said, Behold, I see the heavens opened, and the Son of man standing on the right hand of God. 57. Then they cried out with a loud voice, and stopped their ears, and ran upon him with one accord, 58. And cast him out of the city, and stoned him: and the witnesses laid down their clothes at a young man's feet, whose name was Saul. 59. And they stoned Stephen, calling upon God, and saying, Lord Jesus, receive my spirit."*

God is a Person in His own right, and so is Jesus Christ. Stephen said, 'Lord Jesus' – he was calling on his Friend.

We'll look at some verses from **Acts 8** and **Acts 10** relating the spread of God's Grace in those early days :

**Acts 8:12, 20, 22**

*"But when they believed Philip preaching the things concerning the kingdom of God, and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women. ... 20. But Peter said unto him, [Simon] Thy money perish with thee, because thou hast thought that the gift of God may be purchased with money. ... 22. Repent therefore of this thy wickedness, and pray God, if perhaps the thought of thine heart may be forgiven thee."*

**Acts 10:2, 4, 15, 22, 28, 31, 33, 36, 38, 41, 42**

*"A devout man, [Cornelius] and one that feared God with all his house, which gave much alms to the people, and prayed to God always. ... 4. And when he [Cornelius] looked on him [an angel], he was afraid, and said, What is it, Lord? And he said unto him, Thy prayers and thine alms are come up for a memorial before God. ... 15. And the voice spake unto him [Peter] again the second time, What God hath cleansed, that call not thou common. ... 22. And they said, Cornelius the centurion, a just man, and one that feareth God, and of good report among all*

*the nation of the Jews, was warned from God by an holy angel to send for thee into his house, and to hear words of thee. ... 28. And he [Peter] said unto them, Ye know how that it is an unlawful thing for a man that is a Jew to keep company, or come unto one of another nation; but God hath shewed me that I should not call any man common or unclean. ... 31. And said, Cornelius, thy prayer is heard, and thine alms are had in remembrance in the sight of God. ... 33. Immediately therefore I sent to thee; and thou hast well done that thou art come. Now therefore are we all here present before God, to*

*hear all things that are commanded thee of God. ... 36. The word which God sent unto the children of Israel, preaching peace by Jesus Christ: (He is Lord of all:) ... 38. How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Ghost and with power: who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the devil; for God was with Him. ... 41. Not to all the people, but unto witnesses chosen before of God, even to us, who did eat and drink with Him after He rose from the dead. 42. And He commanded us to preach unto the people, and to testify that it is He which was ordained of God to be the Judge of quick and dead."*

The God of all Grace has called **everyone** into His House, **if they will come via Jesus...** Once I've come to Him through Christ, then Christ is my **background** – so **anyone** can come. If we in this modern Christian environment realised that we were reckoning with Someone we haven't seen, we would be afraid. When I come to God I should live **more** properly than a proper moral person, not **less**.

**Acts 11:9, 17 – 18**

*"But the voice answered me [Peter] again from heaven, What God hath cleansed, that call not thou common. ... 17. Forasmuch then as God gave them the like gift as He did unto us, who believed on the Lord Jesus Christ; what was I, that I could withstand God? 18. When they [the Jewish believers] heard these things, they held their peace, and glorified God, saying, Then hath God also to the Gentiles granted repentance unto life."*

**Acts 12:5, 23**

*"Peter therefore was kept in prison: but prayer was made without ceasing of the church unto God for him. ... 23. And immediately the angel of the Lord smote him [Herod], because he gave not God the glory: and he was eaten of worms, and gave up the ghost."*

**Acts 13:17, 26,**

*"The God of this people of Israel chose our fathers, and exalted the people when they dwelt as strangers in the land of Egypt, and with an high arm brought He them out of it. ... 26. Men and brethren, children of the stock of Abraham, and whosoever among you feareth God, to you is the word of this salvation sent. "*

vs32 – 34

*“And we declare unto you glad tidings, how that the promise which was made unto the fathers, 33. God hath fulfilled the same unto us their children, in that He hath raised up Jesus again; as it is also written in the second psalm, Thou art My Son, this day have I begotten Thee. 34. And as concerning that He raised Him up from the dead, now no more to return to corruption, He said on this wise, I will give You the sure mercies of David. God is one Person; Christ is another – Both equally contactable, and*

equally lovely.

**Acts 14:15**

*“And saying, Sirs, why do ye these things? We also are men of like passions with you, and preach unto you that ye should turn from these vanities unto the living God, which made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and all things that are therein.” They*

refer to God as the Creator. Christ is the actual Creator, but God is the One Who wanted the Creation; Who sanctioned it.

**Acts 15:4**

*“And when they were come to Jerusalem, they were received of the church, and of the apostles and elders, and they declared all things that God had done with them.”*

**Acts 16:25, 34**

*“And at midnight Paul and Silas prayed, and sang praises unto God: and the prisoners heard them. ... 34. And when he [the keeper of the prison] had brought them into his house, he set meat before them, and rejoiced, believing in God with all his house.”*

How can I live a Christian life if I haven't got a Father? How can I be a child of God if I never speak to God my Father?

**Acts 17:23 – 30**

*For as I passed by, and beheld your devotions, I found an altar with this inscription, TO THE UNKNOWN GOD. Whom therefore ye ignorantly worship, Him declare I unto you. 24. God that made the world and all things therein, seeing that He is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands; 25. Neither is worshipped with men's hands, as*

*though He needed any thing, seeing He giveth to all life, and breath, and all things; 26. And hath made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation; 27. That they should seek the Lord, if haply they might feel after Him, and find Him, though He be not far from every one of us:*

*28. For in Him we live, and move, and have our being; as certain also of your own poets have said, For we are also His offspring. 29. Forasmuch then as we are the offspring of God, we ought not to think that the Godhead is like unto gold, or silver, or stone, graven by art and man's device. 30. And the times of this ignorance God winked at; but now commandeth all men every where to repent:”*

Paul's spirit was stirred by the heathen. How many of us have the same inscription in our households – to the unknown God? We know Christ made all things, but God is the Creator : all that Christ made was exactly how God wanted it. God is my Father; I have to be like Him. His Qualities are only good, so I am quite safe to follow Him! Children who “will not lie” [Isaiah 63:8]; children who will love Him. He wants a Family to live with Him.

**Acts 18:7**

*“And he [Paul] departed thence, and entered into a certain man's house, named Justus, one that worshipped God, whose house joined hard to the synagogue.”*

**v13**

*“Saying, This fellow persuadeth men to worship God contrary to the law.” God is* contrary to the Law; He is His own Law – it is hidden, contained in Jesus Christ.

**Acts 19: 8, 11**

*"And he [Paul] went into the synagogue, and spake boldly for the space of three months, disputing and persuading the things concerning the kingdom of God. ...*

*11. And God wrought special miracles by the hands of Paul."* It is God's Kingdom; God is the Father of the Family; He thought of this Church. He bore the thought of the agony of His Son without moving one finger, without opening His mouth... All were conscious of God as a separate Person from Christ.

**Acts 20:21, 24 -25, 32**

*"Testifying both to the Jews, and also to the Greeks, repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ. ... 24. But none of these things move me, neither count I my life dear unto myself, so that I might finish my course with joy, and the ministry, which I have received of the Lord Jesus, to testify the gospel of the grace of God. 25. And now, behold, I know that ye all, among whom I have gone preaching the kingdom of God, shall see my face no more. ... 32. And now, brethren, I commend you to God, and to the word of His grace, which is able to build you up, and to give you an inheritance among all them which are sanctified. Have I admitted that I have lived an ungod-*

*ly life? Have I repented? It is God's Grace that endured the thought of sending His Son to die. Paul was going into that Kingdom where God was in control.*

**Acts 21:19**

*"And when he [Paul] had saluted them, he declared particularly what things God had wrought among the Gentiles by his ministry."*

**Acts 22:14**

*"And he [Ananias] said, The God of our fathers hath chosen thee, that thou shouldest know His will, and see that Just One, and shouldest hear the voice of His mouth."*

**Acts 23:3 - 4, 14 - 16**

*"Then said Paul unto him [Ananias the high priest], God shall smite thee, thou whited wall: for sittest thou to judge me after the law, and commandest me to be smitten contrary to the law? 4. And they that stood by said, Revilest thou God's high priest? ... 14. And they came to the chief priests and elders, and said, We have bound ourselves under a great curse, that we will eat nothing until we have slain Paul. 15. Now therefore ye with the council signify to the chief captain that he bring down unto you to morrow, as though ye would enquire something more perfectly concerning him: and we, or ever he come near, are ready to kill him. 16. And when Paul's sister's son heard of their lying in wait, he went and entered into the castle, and told Paul."*

**Acts 26:6 - 8, 18, 19 - 22, 29**

*"And now I stand and am judged for the hope of the promise made of God unto our fathers: 7. Unto which promise our twelve tribes, instantly serving God day and night, hope to come. For which hope's sake, king Agrippa, I am accused of the Jews. 8. Why should it be though a thing incredible with you, that God should raise the dead? ... 18. To open their eyes, and turn them from darkness to*

*light, and from the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith that is in Me [Christ]. 19. Whereupon, O king Agrippa, I was not disobedient unto the heavenly vision: 20. But shewed first unto them of Damascus, and at Jerusalem, and throughout all the coasts of Judaea, and then to the Gentiles, that they should repent and turn to God, and do*

*works meet for repentance. 21. For these causes the Jews caught me in the temple, and went about to kill me. 22. Having therefore obtained help of God, I continue unto this day, witnessing both to small and great, saying none other things than those which the prophets and Moses did say should come. ... 29. And Paul said, I would to God, that not only thou, but also all that hear me this day were both almost, and altogether such as I am, except these bonds."*

My life should be upright, disciplined and orderly.

**Acts 27:24 – 25**

*“Saying, Fear not, Paul; thou must be brought before Caesar: and, lo, God hath given thee all them that sail with thee. 25. Wherefore, sirs, be of good cheer: for I believe God, that it shall be even as it was told me.”* Paul had utter assurance of God’s Answer.

**Acts 28:15, 23, 28**

*“And from thence, when the brethren heard of us, they came to meet us as far as Appii forum, and The three taverns: whom when Paul saw, he thanked God, and took courage. ... 23. And when they had appointed him a day, there came many to him into his lodging; to whom he expounded and testified and kingdom of God, persuading them concerning Jesus, both out of the law of Moses, and out of the prophets, from morning till evening. ... 28. Be it known therefore unto you, that the salvation of God is sent unto the Gentiles, and that they will hear it.”* Christ was taken to people who

were not Jews.

Is this what my home is like; when people come in, do I talk about, and preach the Kingdom of God with all confidence? I am free of all men, but I am responsible to God.

### Conscious of Personal Care and Concern

**The early church were always very conscious of God’s Care for them; of His personal concern for them** in the sense of holding Himself responsible for their well-being at all times – so they were acutely aware that He was on their side in every situation. They grouped God and themselves together and everyone else in opposition; they were certain of a favourable response from their Head.

**Acts 2:24 – 25, 27 – 28, 32**

<i>“Whom God hath raised up, having loosed the pains of death: because it was not possible that He should be holden of it. 25. For David speaketh concerning Him, I foresaw the Lord</i>	<i>always before My face, for He is on My right hand, that I should not be moved. ... 27. Because Thou wilt not leave My soul in hell, neither wilt Thou suffer Thine Holy One to see corruption. 28.</i>	<i>Thou hast made known to Me the ways of life; Thou shalt make Me full of joy with Thy countenance. ... 32. This Jesus hath God raised up, whereof we all are witnesses.”</i>
------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------

**Acts 3:15**

*“And killed the Prince of life, whom God hath raised from the dead; whereof we are witnesses.”*

**Acts 4:10**

*“Be it known unto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom ye crucified, whom God raised from the dead, even by Him doth this man stand here before you whole.”*

**Acts 5:30**

*“The God of our fathers raised up Jesus, whom ye slew and hanged on a tree.”*

**Acts 7:55 – 60**

<i>“But he, [Stephen] being full of the Holy Ghost, looked up stedfastly into heaven, and saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing on the right hand of God, 56. And said, Behold, I see the heavens opened, and the Son</i>	<i>of man standing on the right hand of God. 57. Then they cried out with a loud voice, and stopped their ears, and ran upon him with one accord, 58. And cast him out of the city, and stoned him: and the witnesses laid down their clothes at a young</i>	<i>man’s feet, whose name was Saul. 59. And they stoned Stephen, calling upon God, and saying, Lord Jesus, receive my spirit. 60. And he kneeled down, and cried with a loud voice, Lord, lay not this sin to their charge. And when he had said this, he fell asleep.”</i>
------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------

- Acts 8:12** *"But when they believed Philip preaching the things concerning the kingdom of God, and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women."*
- Acts 10:36, 38, 40** *"The word which God sent unto the children of Israel, preaching peace by Jesus Christ: (He is Lord of all:) ... 38. How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Ghost and with power: who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the devil; for God was with Him. 40. Him God raised up the third day, and shewed Him openly."*
- Acts 11:17** *"Forasmuch then as God gave them the like gift as He did unto us, who believed on the Lord Jesus Christ; what was I, that I could withstand God?"*
- Acts 12:17** *"But he [Peter], beckoning unto them with the hand to hold their peace, declared unto them how the Lord had brought him out of the prison. And he said, Go shew these things unto James, and to the brethren. And he departed, and went into another place."*
- Acts 15:11** *"But we believe that through the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ we shall be saved, even as they."*
- Acts 20:21, 32** *"Testifying both to the Jews, and also to the Greeks, repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ. ... 32. And now, brethren, I commend you to God, and to the word of His grace, which is able to build you up, and to give you an inheritance among all them which are sanctified."*
- Acts 26:14 – 18**  
*"And when we were all fallen to the earth, I heard a voice speaking unto me, and saying in the Hebrew tongue, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou Me? it is hard for thee to kick against the pricks. 15. And I said, Who art Thou, Lord? And He said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest. 16. But rise, and stand upon thy feet: for I have appeared unto thee for this purpose, to make thee a minister and a witness both of these things which thou hast seen, and of those things in the which I will appear unto thee; 17. Delivering thee from the people, and from the Gentiles, unto whom now I send thee, 18. To open their eyes, and to turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith that is in Me."*
- Acts 28:23** *"And when they had appointed him a day, there came many to him into his lodging; to whom he expounded and testified of kingdom of God, persuading them concerning Jesus, both out of the law of Moses, and out of the prophets, from morning till evening."*

### Conscious of God's Love for Christ

**The early church were always very conscious of the Fact that Christ meant much to God.** They were moved always by the Holy Ghost to appeal to God in the Name of Jesus. So they were certain always of an effective Answer – God-ward and Church-ward; effective answers to their problems and needs.

- Acts 2:23, 36** *"Him, being delivered by the determinate counsel and foreknowledge of God, ye have taken, and by wicked hands have crucified and slain. ... 36. Therefore let all the house of Israel know assuredly, that God hath made that same Jesus, whom ye have crucified, both Lord and Christ."*

**Acts 3:14, 26**

*"But ye denied the Holy One and the Just, and desired a murderer to be granted unto you. ... 26. Unto you first God, having raised up His Son Jesus, sent Him to bless you, in turning away every one of you from his iniquities."*

**Acts 4:10**

*"Be it known unto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom ye crucified, whom God raised from the dead, even by Him doth this man stand here before you whole."*

**Acts 5:31**

*"Him hath God exalted with His right hand to be a Prince and a Saviour, for to give repentance to Israel, and forgiveness of sins."*

**Acts 7:55 – 60**

*"But he, [Stephen] being full of the Holy Ghost, looked up stedfastly into heaven, and saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing on the right hand of God, 56. And said, Behold, I see the heavens opened, and the Son of man standing on the right hand of God. 57. Then they cried out with a loud voice, and stopped their ears, and ran upon him with one accord, 58. And cast him out of the city, and stoned him: and the witnesses laid down their clothes at a young man's feet, whose name was Saul. 59. And they stoned Stephen, calling upon God, and saying, Lord Jesus, receive my spirit. 60. And he kneeled down, and cried with a loud voice, Lord, lay not this sin to their charge. And when he had said this, he fell asleep."*

**Acts 10:15, 42**

*"And the voice spake unto him [Peter] again the second time, What God hath cleansed, that call not thou common. ... 42. And He commanded us to preach unto the people, and to testify that it is He which was ordained of God to be the Judge of quick and dead."*

**Acts 13:17**

*"The God of this people of Israel chose our fathers, and exalted the people when they dwelt as strangers in the land of Egypt, and with an high arm brought He them out of it."*

**Acts 15:15 – 17**

*"And to this agree the words of the prophets; as it is written, 16. After this I will return, and will build again the tabernacle of David, which is fallen down; and I will build again the ruins thereof, and I will set it up: 17. That the residue of men might seek after the Lord, and all the Gentiles, upon whom My name is called, saith the Lord, who doeth all these things."*

**Acts 17:31**

*"Because He hath appointed a day, in the which He will judge the world in righteousness by that man whom He hath ordained; whereof He hath given assurance unto all men, in that He hath raised Him from the dead."*

**Acts 18:25 – 28**

*"This man was instructed in the way of the Lord; and being fervent in the Spirit, he spake and taught diligently the things of the Lord, knowing only the baptism of John. 26. And he began to speak boldly in the synagogue: whom when Aquila and Pricilla had heard, they took him unto them, and expounded unto him the way of God more perfectly. 27. And when he was disposed to pass into Achaia, the brethren wrote, exhorting the disciples to receive him: who, when he was come, helped them much which had believed through grace: 28. For he mightily convinced the Jews, and that publickly, shewing by the scriptures that Jesus was Christ."*

**Acts 20:24**

*"But none of these things move me, neither count I my life dear unto myself, so that I might finish my course with joy, and the ministry, which I have received of the Lord Jesus, to testify the gospel of the grace of God."*



- Acts 26:22 – 23** *"Having therefore obtained help of God, I continue unto this day, witnessing both to small and great, saying none other things than those which the prophets and Moses did say should come: 23. That Christ should suffer, and that He should be the first that should rise from the dead, and should shew light unto the people, and to the Gentiles."*
- Acts 27:22, 24** *"And now I exhort you to be of good cheer: for there shall be no loss of any man's life among you, but of the ship. ... 24. Saying, Fear not Paul; thou must be brought to Caesar: and, lo, God hath given thee all them that sail with thee."*
- Acts 28:31** *"Preaching the kingdom of God, and teaching those things which concern the Lord Jesus Christ, with all confidence, no man forbidding him."*

### God a Separate Person From Christ

**The Church of God was in contact with the Lord God Almighty** [as emphasised in *Revelation 4:8*] **as a Person separate from Christ.** Its members were truly children of God.

Unless I am living in that Realm as contacting God directly, calling myself a child of God is a shaky calling! Not to be in that personal relationship, I should question how much I am the child of God...

**Ephesians 5:1 – 2** *"Be ye therefore followers of God, as dear children; 2. And walk in love, as Christ also hath loved us, and hath given Himself for us an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweet-smelling savour."*

**Galatians 3:26** *"For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus."* If you are not calling upon God as the early church did, your faith in Jesus Christ's Work of Salvation on God's behalf is shaky...

**Romans 8:16** *"The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God."* Not being made in the same substance, we are not His children in that respect. But in receiving His deathless Love, boundless Care, endless Patience, amazing Humility, measureless Grace to deal with a person like me, I ought not to have the fear that the world has!!

I must know that the action of God's Word has a good result. I couldn't be related to anyone so closely and forever as I am to God. Christ taught His disciples always to consider God as their Father individually and together; to cling to Him, depend on Him; His Meekness, His tenderness – on the credentials of Jesus Christ Who died to put away my sin.

**Luke 11:2** *"And He said unto them, When ye pray, say, Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be Thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done, as in heaven, so in earth."*

Because of this Revelation of **This Love of God** to be able to say, "Our Father", Satan has made it the most meaningless statement. The beginning of such a prayer means that I am encouraging my own confidence in the kind of Person Christ said is my Father.

**Matthew 5:16** *"Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven."* Let my life, character, and conduct, be thankful to the Father for producing such a child! I should be a breath of Heaven to the world around me.

v45

*“That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: for He maketh His sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust.” –*

this is the Nature of my Father. We must get rid of pre-conceived ideas – meeting a person with a pre-judged case in my mind.

v48

*“Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.”* We are to live as God lives. To accept that I can't be perfect is to call Jesus Christ a liar, because He said we should be perfect.

### **Matthew 6:4 – 8**

*“That thine alms may be in secret: and thy Father which seeth in secret Himself shall reward thee openly. 5. And when thou prayest, thou shalt not be as the hypocrites are: for they love to pray standing in the synagogues and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. 6. But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly. 7. But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking. 8. Be not ye therefore like unto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask Him.”*

If I go into my house and speak to my Father, I don't open all the doors to let my neighbours know. If I have money to give, I ask Him, not telling everyone what I am doing with my money. If I ask God for something, the results are manifest, not my asking – that is private. Just ask Him, not everyone – they may be too busy!

### **Matthew 7:21**

*“Not every one that saith unto Me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of My Father which is in heaven.” It is the Father's Will*

that runs the Home, so see to it that your Father has your loving obedience...

### **Luke 11:13**

*“If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask Him?”* Although we

are sinners, we have some ability to gentleness towards our children.

### **Matthew 10:20**

*“For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father which speaketh in you.”* God

provides even that for His children – the Holy Spirit when we need Him.

### **vs32 – 33**

*“Whosoever therefore shall confess Me before men, him will I confess also before My Father which is in heaven. 33. But whosoever shall deny Me before men, him will I also deny before My Father which is in heaven.”*

### **Matthew 11:25 – 27**

*“At that time Jesus answered and said, I thank Thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because Thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes. 26. Even so, Father: for so it seemed good in Thy sight. 27. All things are delivered unto Me of My Father: and no man knoweth the Son, but the Father; neither knoweth any man the Father, save the Son, and he to whomsoever the Son will reveal Him.”* You cannot get anywhere with God if you cling to your own

ways, but to come for His Advice and direction – thankful that you have such a Father.

### **Matthew 16:17**

*“And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon Bar-jona: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but My Father which is in heaven.”* The

things that men don't know, God can reveal them unto us if it is necessary.

**Matthew 18:10, 19**

*"Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones; for I say unto you, That in heaven their angels do always behold the face of My Father which is in heaven. ... 19. Again I say unto you, That if two of you shall agree on earth as touching any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of My Father which is in heaven."* In this

Family, there are no divisions, criticisms behind a smiling face, and fault-finding, but in this Family there is complete unanimity – harmony and accord.

**Matthew 23:9**

*"And call no man your father upon earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven."*

Do not expect from anyone, what God only is able to provide you with. Go to Him for everything, because my earthly father will probably not be able to give me as good an answer as my Heavenly Father, nor can he supply me with all my needs; there is some lack in him, obviously. But with God I have everything.

**Mark 14:36**

*"And He said, Abba, Father, all things are possible unto Thee; take away this cup from Me: nevertheless not what I will, but what Thou wilt."*

Have anyone of us shut the door of our room with the whole world on our shoulders, fallen on our knees and said, "Abba, Father" – then you will know that God supplies all your need. He will answer back if I call out to Him. I'll get up from my knees saying that the disaster isn't a disaster when God is my Father. He is not worn out by my constantly coming to Him!

**Matthew 26:52 – 54**

*"Then said Jesus unto him [Peter], Put up again thy sword into his place: for all they that take the sword shall perish with the sword. 53. Thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to My Father, and He shall presently give Me more than twelve legions of angels? 54. But how then shall the scriptures be fulfilled, that thus it must be?"*

In the Garden of Gethsemane, with the wolves around Him, He had prayed so He was ready for everything that was to come. The others ran away; Peter followed, but he hadn't prayed so he got into further trouble. Christ, having agreed that He would do what God wanted Him to do, was so sure that His Father knew that His motives were right and that He was willing to answer Him. The Father and the Son were in it together; it was between Them.

What the Lord Jesus taught them and us is that God is our Father – our Provider in all circumstances and conditions; all our needs, every problem and difficulty – nothing excluded in joy and in sorrow forever!

The Church of God was taught this as written in the Epistles, and in its beginning, enacted it. Teaching is vital to make a transformed sinner live as a child of an everlasting, holy God. There are 21 Books teaching how to be properly related to God and one on the enacting it [Acts]! All the Church's one goal, ambition as its Father, is to gather around Jesus Christ. There is only one way to declare my totally committed life to God publicly – in being baptised in water.

**Ephesians 4:6**

*"One God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in you all."* We should all have the same characteristics. God is the Head of the Family and it should deal with Him as such. Each one of the members reflects the riches of the Grace of this Father. He is in us all through Christ. We are able to envisage what our position is in Eternity before getting there – joint-heirs with Jesus Christ. There will be a public Ceremony of the joining together of His children with Christ!

- Romans 1:7**                      *"To all that be in Rome, beloved of God, called to be saints: Grace to you and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ."* This is the way you address the other members of this Family! A saint is very much alive, and considered by God as most holy, pure, separated to God.
- Romans 6:4**                      *"Therefore we are buried with Him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life."*
- Romans 8:15**                      *"For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father."*
- Romans 15:6**                      *"That ye may with one mind and one mouth glorify God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ."*
- 1 Corinthians 1:3**                      *"Grace be unto you, and peace, from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ."*
- 1 Corinthians 8:6**                      *"But to us there is but one God, the Father, of whom are all things, and we in Him; and one Lord Jesus Christ, by whom are all things, and we by Him."*
- 1 Corinthians 15:24**                      *"Then cometh the end, when He shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when He shall have put down all rule and all authority and power."*
- 2 Corinthians 1:2, 13**                      *"Grace be to you and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ. ... 13. For we write none other things unto you, than what ye read or acknowledge; and I trust ye shall acknowledge even to the end."*
- 2 Corinthians 6:18**                      *"And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be My sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty."*
- 2 Corinthians 11:31**                      *"The God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which is blessed for evermore, knoweth that I lie not."*
- Galatians 1:1, 3 - 4**                      *"Paul, an apostle, (not of men, neither by man, but by Jesus Christ, and God the Father, who raised Him from the dead;) ... 3. Grace be to you and peace from God the Father, and from our Lord Jesus Christ, 4. Who gave Himself for our sins, that He might deliver us from this present evil world, according to the will of God and our Father."*
- Galatians 4:6**                      *"And because ye are sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of His Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father." By the Spirit only may you appreciate God as your Father.*
- Ephesians 1:2 - 3, 17**                      *"Grace be to you, and peace, from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ. 3. Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ. ... 17. That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the Spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of Him."*
- Ephesians 2:18**                      *"For through Him we both have access by one Spirit unto the Father."*

- Ephesians 3:14** *"For this cause I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ."*
- Ephesians 4:6** *"One God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in you all."*
- Ephesians 5:20** *"Giving thanks always for all things unto God and the Father in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ."*
- Ephesians 6:23** *"Peace be to the brethren, and love with faith, from God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ."*

This Epistle of *Ephesians* emphasises that God the Father is the Head of the Family, because it concentrates on the Church. All my requests halt at God, where the answers come from. We have to pray like this from now on - unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ. We must pray to God the Father in the Name of Jesus Christ our Lord.

- Colossians 1:2 – 3** *"To the saints and faithful brethren in Christ which are at Colosse: Grace be unto you, and peace, from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ. 3. We give thanks to God and the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, praying always for you."*
- Colossians 1:12, 19** *"Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light. ... 19. For it pleased the Father that in Him [Christ] should all fulness dwell." Christ is not my Father – God is my Father!*
- Colossians 3:17** *"And whatsoever ye do in word or deed, do all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God and the Father by Him." It is a happy, grateful, blessed, rich, united, well-provided-for, lovely, attractive-to-meet, Family of God, through Jesus Christ!!*
- 1 John 1:2 – 3** *"(For the life was manifested, and we have seen it, and bear witness, and shew unto you that eternal life, which was with the Father, and was manifested unto us;) 3. That which we have seen and heard declare we unto you, that ye also may have fellowship with us: and truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with His Son Jesus Christ."*

Fellowship means having something in common, something which both parties have the same regard for – not one less and one more than the other – and Jesus Christ is the Reason for this Fellowship.

**1 John 2:1, 13, 15 – 16, 22 – 24**

<p><i>"My little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not. And if any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous. ... 13. I write unto you, fathers, because ye have known Him that is from the beginning. I write unto you, young men, because ye have overcome the wicked one. I write unto you, little children,</i></p>	<p><i>because ye have known the Father. ... 15. Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him. 16. For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world. ... 22. Who is a liar but he that denieth that Jesus is the</i></p>	<p><i>Christ? He is antichrist, that denieth the Father and the Son. 23. Whosoever denieth the Son, the same hath not the Father: [but] he that acknowledgeth the Son hath the Father also. 24. Let that therefore abide in you, which ye have heard from the beginning. If that which ye have heard from the beginning shall remain in you, ye also shall continue in the Son, and in the Father."</i></p>
---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------

John calls them "little children" because they are helpless without the Father. The Father is providing for His lovely Family. God said to Christ if they are not pleased with You, they are not pleased with Me. If I am denying the existence of the Eternal Christ in that Person called Jesus, I am denying the existence of God my Father.

**There is no God without Christ.** A person is a liar if he denies God's Word is supreme. If Christ truly dwells within you, you are a member of God's Family. Your whole life must be filled with Christ.

**1 John 3:1** *"Behold, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God: therefore the world knoweth us not, because it knew Him not."*

**1 John 4:14** *"And we have seen and do testify that the Father sent the Son to be the Saviour of the world." When I am born again, I realise how loving God is.*

**1 John 5:7** *"For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost: and these three are one." The Father, the Word Who was made the Son, and the Holy Ghost; One in Their living and thinking; not One in Person.*

**Revelation 1:6** *"And hath made us kings and priests unto God and His Father; to Him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen."*

One of the promises to the churches [Thyatira, *Revelation 2:26 – 27*] if they returned to Him was that they should have what Christ has – to rule over the nations. It is a Royal Family. The royal Blood was poured out to begin this Family – it is well on its way, and it will soon be called Home!!

### The New Testament Revelation of God as our Father

In the holy Scriptures before Christ was manifest in the flesh, the Old Testament, there was **no revelation of God as the Father**. These Scriptures we are going through are the only Light we have on the matter.

**Psalm 68:5** *"A father of the fatherless, and a judge of the widows, is God in His holy habitation."*  
With the God of that Old Testament, the contact with men was Christ, so the revelation of God as my Father was not available then.

**John 8:25 – 27** *"Then said they unto Him, Who art Thou? And Jesus saith unto them, Even the same that I said unto you from the beginning. 26. I have many things to say and to judge of you: but He that sent Me is true; and I speak to the world those things which I have heard of Him. 27. They understood not that He spake to them of the Father."* This shows the result of this ignorance. The Pharisees objected to the title "*the Son of God*", because to them there was no such thing. To them there was only One God, and not a Father as we can know Him now – but the One Person Who had been dealing with them had been Christ!

**Psalm 89:26** *"He shall cry unto Me, Thou art My father, My God, and the rock of My salvation."*  
A Prophecy of Christ calling out to this mysterious Person, now no longer mysterious. But they only knew Christ as their God – not as their Saviour, but as Jehovah. The common people heard Christ gladly, but the uncommon people did not!

**Psalm 103:13** *"Like as a father pitieth his children, so the LORD pitieth them that fear Him."* When Christ arrived and called Himself God they were dreadfully upset.

**Isaiah 9:6** *"For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon His shoulder: and His name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace." A Child born – a human body – a son; His gender given! And He came saying God is your Father!*

**Isaiah 63:16**

*"Doubtless Thou art our father, though Abraham be ignorant of us, and Israel acknowledge us not: Thou, O LORD, art our father, our redeemer; Thy name is from everlasting."*

The prophet has some revelation but he doesn't know Who that God is.

**2 Samuel 7:14**

*"I will be His father, and He shall be My son. If He commit iniquity, I will chasten Him with the rod of men, and with the stripes of the children of men."*

Christ is Equal with God. He didn't have to obey God until He came to pour out His Blood to be God's Son.

Jesus came down and said, ' Call God, "**Father**" ' – and He looked up to Heaven when He did the miracles. He didn't have to ask God, but He said, 'You are the One Who is responsible'. He had Humility, and He revealed through His Humility that I have a wonderful Father.

**John 1:14, 18**

*"And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld His glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth. ... 18. No man hath seen God at any time; the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, He hath declared Him."*

The same Person Who was God and equal with God, took on the substance called 'man' and now He is in that same Body.

**John 3:35**

*"The Father loveth the Son, and hath given all things into His hand."*

**John 4:23 – 24**

*"But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship Him. 24. God is a Spirit: and they that worship Him must worship Him in spirit and in truth."*

**John 5:17 – 45 (vs17 – 28, vs29 – 45, p.120)**

*"But Jesus answered them, My Father worketh hitherto, and I work. 18. Therefore the Jews sought the more to kill Him, because He not only had broken the sabbath, but said also that God was His Father, making Himself equal with God. 19. Then answered Jesus and said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Son can do nothing*

*of Himself, but what He seeth the Father do: for what things soever He doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise. 20. For the Father loveth the Son, and sheweth Him all things that Himself doeth: and He will shew Him greater works than these, that ye may marvel. 21. For as the Father raiseth up the dead, and quickeneth them; even so the Son quickeneth whom He will. 22. For the Father*

*judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgment unto the Son: 23. That all men should honour the Son, even as they honour the Father. He that honoureth not the Son honoureth not the Father which hath sent Him. 24. Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth My word, and believeth on Him that sent Me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from*

*death unto life. 25. Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live. 26. For as the Father hath life in Himself; so hath He given to the Son to have life in Himself; 27. And hath given Him authority to execute judgment also, because He is the Son of man. 28. Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear His voice,*

(John 5 vs29 – 45)

29. And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation. 30. I can of Mine own self do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and My judgment is just; because I seek not Mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent Me. 31. If I bear witness of Myself, My witness is not true. 32. There is another that beareth witness of Me; and I know that the witness which He witnesseth of Me is true. 33. Ye sent unto John, and he bare witness unto the truth. 34. But I receive not testimony from man: but these things I say, that ye might be saved. 35. He was a burning and a shining light: and ye were willing for a season to rejoice in his light. 36. But I have greater witness than that of John: for the works which the Father hath given Me to finish, the same works that I do, bear witness of Me, that the Father hath sent Me. 37. And the Father Himself, which hath sent Me, hath borne witness of Me. Ye have neither heard His voice at any time, nor seen His shape. 38. And ye have not His word abiding in you: for whom He hath sent, Him ye believe not. 39. Search the scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life: and they are they which testify of Me. 40. And ye will not come to Me, that ye might have life. 41. I receive not honour from men. 42. But I know you, that ye have not the love of God in you. 43. I am come in My Father's name, and ye receive Me not: if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive. 44. How can ye believe, which receive honour one of another, and seek not the honour that cometh from God only? 45. Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuseth you, even Moses, in whom ye trust."

**John 6:27 – 55** (vs27 – 50. vs 51 – 55, p.121)

"Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you: for Him hath God the Father sealed. 28. Then said they unto Him, What shall we do, that we might work the works of God? 29. Jesus answered and said unto them, This is the work of God, that ye believe on Him whom He hath sent. 30. They said therefore unto Him, What sign shewest Thou then, that we may see, and believe Thee? what dost Thou work? 31. Our fathers did eat manna in the desert; as it is written, He gave them bread from heaven to eat. 32. Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Moses gave you not that bread from heaven; but My Father giveth you the true bread from heaven. 33. For the bread of God is He which cometh down from heaven, and giveth life unto the world. 34. Then said they unto Him, Lord, evermore give us this bread. 35. And Jesus said unto them, I am the bread of life: he that cometh to Me shall never hunger; and he that believeth on Me shall never thirst. 36. But I said unto you, That ye also have seen Me, and believe not. 37. All that the Father giveth Me shall come to Me; and him that cometh to Me I will in no wise cast out. 38. For I came down from heaven, not to do Mine own will, but the will of Him that sent Me. 39. And this is the Father's will which hath sent Me, that of all which He hath given Me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day. 40. And this is the will of Him that sent Me, that every one which seeth the Son, and believeth on Him, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day. 41. The Jews then murmured at Him, because He said, I am the bread which came down from heaven. 42. And they said, Is not this Jesus, the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? how is it then that He saith, I came down from heaven? 43. Jesus therefore answered and said unto them, Murmur not among yourselves. 44. No man can come to Me, except the Father which hath sent Me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day. 45. It is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto Me. 46. Not that any man hath seen the Father, save He which is of God, He hath seen the Father. 47. Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on Me hath everlasting life. 48. I am that bread of life. 49. Your fathers did eat manna in the wilderness, and are dead. 50. This is the bread which cometh down from heaven, that a man may eat thereof, and not die.



51. I am the living bread which came down from heaven: if any man eat of this bread, he shall live for ever: and the bread that I will give is My flesh, which I will give

for the life of the world. 52. The Jews therefore strove among themselves, saying, How can this man give us His flesh to eat? 53. Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily,

I say unto you, Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink His blood, ye have no life in you. 54. Whoso eateth My flesh, and drinketh My blood, hath eternal

life; and I will raise him up at the last day. 55. For My flesh is meat indeed, and My blood is drink indeed."

### John 8:16 – 42

"And yet if I judge, My judgment is true: for I am not alone, but I and the Father that sent Me. 17. It is also written in your law, that the testimony of two men is true. 18. I am one that bear witness of Myself, and the Father that sent Me beareth witness of Me. 19. Then said they unto Him, Where is Thy Father? Jesus answered, Ye neither know Me, nor My Father: if ye had known Me, ye should have known My Father also. 20. These words spake Jesus in the treasury, as He taught in the temple: and no man laid hands on Him; for His hour was not yet come. 21. Then said Jesus again unto them, I go My way, and ye shall seek Me, and shall die in your sins: whither I go, ye cannot come. 22. Then said the Jews, Will He kill Himself? because He saith, Whither I go, ye

cannot come. 23. And He said unto them, Ye are from beneath; I am from above: ye are of this world; I am not of this world. 24. I said therefore unto you, that ye shall die in your sins: for if ye believe not that I am He, ye shall die in your sins. 25. Then said they unto Him, Who art Thou? And Jesus saith unto them, Even the same that I said unto you from the beginning. 26. I have many things to say and to judge of you: but He that sent Me is true; and I speak to the world those things which I have heard of Him. 27. They understood not that He spake to them of the Father. 28. Then said Jesus unto them, When ye have lifted up the Son of man, then shall ye know that I am He, and that I do nothing of Myself; but as My Father hath taught Me, I speak these things. 29. And He that sent Me

is with Me: the Father hath not left Me alone; for I do always those things that please Him. 30. As He spake these words, many believed on Him. 31. Then said Jesus to those Jews which believed on Him, If ye continue in My word, then are ye My disciples indeed; 32. And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free. 33. They answered Him, We be Abraham's seed, and were never in bondage to any man: how sayest Thou, Ye shall be made free? 34. Jesus answered them, Verily, I say unto you, Whosoever committeth sin is the servant of sin. 35. And the servant abideth not in the house for ever: but the Son abideth ever. 36. If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed. 37. I know that ye are Abraham's seed; but

ye seek to kill Me, because My word hath no place in you. 38. I speak that which I have seen with My Father: and ye do that which ye have seen with your father. 39. They answered and said unto him, Abraham is our father. Jesus saith unto them, If ye were Abraham's children, ye would do the works of Abraham. 40. But now ye seek to kill Me, a man that hath told you the truth, which I have heard of God: this did not Abraham. 41. Ye do the deeds of your father. Then said they to Him, We be not born of fornication; we have one Father, even God. 42. Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, ye would love Me: for I proceeded forth and came from God; neither came I of Myself, but He sent Me."

### John 10:15 – 18

"As the Father knoweth Me, even so know I the Father: and I lay down My life for the sheep. 16. And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also

I must bring, and they shall hear My voice; and there shall be one fold, and one shepherd. 17. Therefore doth My Father love Me, because I lay down My life, that I might

take it again. 18. No man taketh it from Me, but I lay it down of Myself. I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. This commandment have I received of My Father."

**John 10:29 – 38**

*"My Father, which gave them Me, is greater than all; and no man is able to pluck them out of My Father's hand. 30. I and My Father are one. 31. Then the Jews took up stones again to stone Him. 32. Jesus answered them, Many good works have I shewed you from My Father; for which of those works do ye stone Me? 33. The Jews answered Him, saying, For a good work we stone Thee not; but for blasphemy; and because that Thou, being a man, makest Thyself God. 34. Jesus answered them, Is it not written in your law, I said, Ye are gods? 35. If He called them gods, unto whom the word of God came, and the scripture cannot be broken; 36. Say ye of Him, whom the Father hath sanctified, and sent into the world, Thou blasphemest; because I said, I am the Son of God? 37. If I do not the works of My Father, believe Me not. 38. But if I do, though ye believe not Me, believe the works: that ye may know, and believe, that the Father is in Me, and I in Him."*

**John 11:41**

*"Then they took away the stone from the place where the dead was laid. And Jesus lifted up His eyes, and said, Father, I thank Thee that Thou hast heard Me."*

**John 12:26 – 50**

*"If any man serve Me, let him follow Me; and where I am, there shall also My servant be: if any man serve Me, him will My Father honour. 27. Now is My soul troubled; and what shall I say? Father, save Me from this hour: but for this cause came I unto this hour. 28. Father, glorify Thy name. Then came there a voice from heaven, saying, I have both glorified it, and will glorify it again. 29. The people therefore, that stood by, and heard it, said that it thundered: others said, An angel spake to Him. 30. Jesus answered and said, This voice came not because of Me, but for your sakes. 31. Now is the judgment of this world: now shall the prince of this world be cast out. 32. And I, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all men unto Me. 33. This He said, signifying what death He should die. 34. The people answered Him, We have heard out of the law that Christ abideth for ever: and how sayest Thou, The Son of man must be lifted up? who is this Son of man? 35. Then Jesus said unto them, Yet a little while is the light with you. Walk while ye have the light, lest darkness come upon you: for he that walketh in darkness knoweth not whither he goeth. 36. While ye have light, believe in the light, that ye may be the children of light. These things spake Jesus, and departed, and did hide Himself from them. 37. But though He had done so many miracles before them, yet they believed not on Him: 38. That the saying of Esaias the prophet might be fulfilled, which he spake, Lord, who hath believed our report? and to whom hath the arm of the Lord been revealed? 39. Therefore they could not believe, because that Esaias said again, 40. He hath blinded their eyes, and hardened their heart; that they should not see with their eyes, nor understand with their heart, and be converted, and I should heal them. 41. These things said Esaias, when he saw His glory, and spake of Him. 42. Nevertheless among the chief rulers also many believed on Him; but because of the Pharisees they did not confess Him, lest they should be put out of the synagogue: 43. For they loved the praise of men more than the praise of God. 44. Jesus cried and said, He that believeth on Me, believeth not on Me, but on Him that sent Me. 45. And he that seeth Me seeth Him that sent Me. 46. I am come a light into the world, that whosoever believeth on Me should not abide in darkness. 47. And if any man hear My words, and believe not, I judge him not: for I came not to judge the world, but to save the world. 48. He that rejecteth Me, and receiveth not My words, hath one that judgeth him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day. 49. For I have not spoken of Myself; but the Father which sent Me, He gave Me a commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak. 50. And I know that His commandment is life everlasting: whatsoever I speak therefore, even as the Father said unto Me, so I speak."*

**John 13:1 – 3**

*"Now before the feast of the passover, when Jesus knew that His hour was come that He should depart out of this world unto the Father, having loved His own which were in the world, He loved them unto the end. 2. And supper being ended, the devil having now put into the heart of Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, to betray Him; 3. Jesus knowing that the Father had given all things into His hands, and that He was come from God, and went to God..."*

**John 14:1 – 16**

*"Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in Me. 2. In My Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. 3. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto Myself; that where I am, there ye may be also. 4. And whither I go ye know, and the way ye know. 5. Thomas*

*saith unto Him, Lord, we know not whither Thou goest; and how can we know the way? 6. Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by Me. 7. If ye had known Me, ye should have known My Father also: and from henceforth ye know Him, and have seen Him. 8. Philip saith unto Him, Lord, shew us the Father, and it sufficeth us. 9. Jesus saith unto*

*him, Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known Me, Philip? he that hath seen Me hath seen the Father; and how sayest thou then, Shew us the Father? 10. Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in Me? the words that I speak unto you I speak not of Myself: but the Father that dwelleth in Me, He doeth the works. 11. Believe Me that I am in the Father, and the Father in Me: or else believe Me for the*

*very works' sake. 12. Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on Me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater works than these shall he do; because I go unto My Father. 13. And whatsoever ye shall ask in My name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son. 14. If ye shall ask any thing in My name, I will do it. 15. If ye love Me, keep My commandments. 16. And I will pray the Father, and He shall give you another Comforter, that He may abide with you for ever;"*

**vs20 – 31**

*"At that day ye shall know that I am in My Father, and ye in Me, and I in you. 21. He that hath My commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth Me: and he that loveth Me shall be loved of My Father, and I will love him, and will manifest Myself to him. 22. Judas saith unto Him, not Iscariot, Lord, how is it that Thou wilt manifest Thyself unto*

*us, and not unto the world? 23. Jesus answered and said unto him, If a man love Me, he will keep My words: and My Father will love him, and We will come unto him, and make Our abode with him. 24. He that loveth Me not keepeth not My sayings: and the word which ye hear is not Mine, but the Father's which sent Me. 25. These things have I spoken unto you,*

*being yet present with you. 26. But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in My name, He shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you. 27. Peace I leave with you, My peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid. 28. Ye have heard how I*

*said unto you, I go away, and come again unto you. If ye loved Me, ye would rejoice, because I said, I go unto the Father: for My Father is greater than I. 29. And now I have told you before it come to pass, that, when it is come to pass, ye might believe. 30. Hereafter I will not talk much with you: for the prince of this world cometh, and hath nothing in Me. 31. But that the world may know that I love the Father; and as the Father gave Me commandment, even so I do. Arise, let us go hence."*

**John 15:1 – 26**

"I am the true vine, and My Father is the husbandman. 2. Every branch in Me that beareth not fruit He taketh away: and every branch that beareth fruit, He purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit. 3. Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you. 4. Abide in Me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in Me. 5. I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in Me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without Me ye can do nothing. 6. If a man abide not in Me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men

gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned. 7. If ye abide in Me, and My words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you. 8. Herein is My Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; so shall ye be My disciples. 9. As the Father hath loved Me, so have I loved you: continue ye in My love. 10. If ye keep My commandments, ye shall abide in My love; even as I have kept My Father's commandments, and abide in His love. 11. These things have I spoken unto you, that My joy might remain in you, and that your joy might be full. 12. This is My commandment, That ye love one another, as I have loved you. 13. Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his

life for his friends. 14. Ye are My friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you. 15. Henceforth I call you not servants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I have called you friends; for all things that I have heard of My Father I have made known unto you. 16. Ye have not chosen Me, but I have chosen you, and ordained you, that ye should go and bring forth fruit, and that your fruit should remain: that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in My name, He may give it you. 17. These things I command you, that ye love one another. 18. If the world hate you, ye know that it hated Me before it hated you. 19. If ye were of the world, the world would love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world

hateth you. 20. Remember the word that I said unto you, The servant is not greater than his lord. If they have persecuted Me, they will also persecute you; if they have kept My saying, they will keep yours also. 21. But all these things will they do unto you for My name's sake, because they know not Him that sent Me. 22. If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin: but now they have no cloke for their sin. 23. He that hateth Me hateth My Father also. 24. If I had not done among them the works which none other man did, they had not had sin: but now have they both seen and hated both Me and My Father. 25. But this cometh to pass, that the word might be fulfilled that is written in their law, They hated Me without a cause. 26. But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, He shall testify of Me:"

**John 16:3, 10**

"And these things will they do unto you, that when the time shall come, ye may remember that I told you of them. And these things I said not unto you at the beginning, because I was with you. ... 10. Of righteousness, because I go to My Father, and ye see Me no more."

**John 16:15 – 32 (vs15 – 20, vs21 – 32 p.125)**

"All things that the Father hath are Mine: therefore said I, that He shall take of Mine, and shall shew it unto you. 16. A little while, and ye shall not see Me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see Me, because I go to the Father. 17. Then said some of His disciples among themselves,

What is this that He saith unto us, A little while, and ye shall not see Me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see Me: and, Because I go to the Father? 18. They said therefore, What is this that He saith, A little while? we cannot tell what He saith. 19. Now Jesus knew that they were desirous to ask Him,

and said unto them, Do ye enquire among yourselves of that I said, A little while, and ye shall not see Me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see Me? 20. Verily, verily, I say unto you, That ye shall weep and lament, but the world shall rejoice: and ye shall be sorrowful, but your sorrow shall be turned into joy.

21. A woman when she is in travail hath sorrow, because her hour is come: but as soon as she is delivered of the child, she remembereth no more the anguish, for joy that a man is born into the world. 22. And ye now therefore have sorrow: but I will see you again, and your heart shall rejoice, and your joy no man taketh from you. 23. And in that day ye shall ask Me nothing. Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in My name, He

will give it you. 24. Hitherto have ye asked nothing in My name: ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full. 25. These things have I spoken unto you in proverbs: but the time cometh, when I shall no more speak unto you in proverbs, but I shall shew you plainly of the Father. 26. At that day ye shall ask in My name: and I say not unto you, that I will pray the Father for you: 27. For the Father Himself loveth you, because ye have loved Me, and have believed that I came out from God.

28. I came forth from the Father, and am come into the world: again, I leave the world, and go to the Father. 29. His disciples said unto Him, Lo, now speakest Thou plainly, and speakest no proverb. 30. Now are we sure that Thou knowest all things, and needest not that any man should ask Thee: by this we believe that Thou camest forth from God. 31. Jesus answered them, Do ye now believe? 32. Behold, the hour cometh, yea, is now come, that ye shall be scattered, every man to his own, and shall leave Me alone: and yet I am not alone, because the Father is with me."

### John 17:1 – 26

"These words spake Jesus, and lifted up His eyes to heaven, and said, Father, the hour is come; glorify Thy Son, that Thy Son also may glorify Thee: 2. As Thou hast given Him power over all flesh, that He should give eternal life to as many as Thou hast given Him. 3. And this is life eternal, that they might know Thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom Thou hast sent. 4. I have glorified Thee on the earth: I have finished the work which Thou gavest Me to do. 5. And now, O Father, glorify Thou Me with Thine own self with the glory which I had with Thee before the world was. 6. I have manifested Thy name unto the men which Thou gavest Me out of the world: Thine they were, and Thou gavest them Me; and they have kept Thy word. 7. Now they have known that all things whatsoever Thou hast given Me are of Thee. 8. For I have given unto them the words which Thou gavest Me; and they have received them, and have known surely that I came out from

Thee, and they have believed that Thou didst send Me. 9. I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but for them which Thou hast given Me; for they are Thine. 10. And all Mine are Thine, and Thine are Mine; and I am glorified in them. 11. And now I am no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to Thee. Holy Father, keep through Thine own name those whom Thou hast given Me, that they may be one, as We are. 12. While I was with them in the world, I kept them in Thy name: those that Thou gavest Me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled. 13. And now come I to Thee; and these things I speak in the world, that they might have My joy fulfilled in themselves. 14. I have given them Thy word; and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. 15. I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou shouldest keep them from the evil. 16. They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. 17. Sanctify them

through Thy truth: Thy word is truth. 18. As Thou hast sent Me into the world, even so have I also sent them into the world. 19. And for their sakes I sanctify Myself, that they also might be sanctified through the truth. 20. Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on Me through their word; 21. That they all may be one; as Thou, Father, art in Me, and I in Thee, that they also may be one in Us: that the world may believe that Thou hast sent Me. 22. And the glory which Thou gavest Me I have given them; that they may be one, even as We are one: 23. I in them, and Thou in Me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that Thou hast sent Me, and hast loved them, as Thou hast loved Me. 24. Father, I will that they also, whom Thou hast given Me, be with Me where I am; that they may behold My glory, which Thou hast given Me: for Thou lovedst Me before the foundation of the world. 25. O righteous Father, the world hath not known Thee: but I have known Thee, and these have known that Thou hast sent Me. 26. And I have declared unto them Thy name, and will declare it: that the love wherewith Thou hast loved Me may be in them, and I in them."

He is very concerned that the world should know of this lovely Family of which He is the First-born, and we the born-again members – truly born again, adopted into the Family and receiving God's Love!

## THE CONCLUSION OF OUR MEDITATION ON "COMMUNICATING WITH GOD"

### 1. We must get to know God as our Father in His Word and by His Spirit.

- John 17:3* "And this is life eternal, that they might know Thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom Thou hast sent."
- 1 John 5:13* "These things have I written unto you that believe on the name of the Son of God; that ye may know that ye have eternal life, and that ye may believe on the name of the Son of God."
- 1 Peter 2:4, 7* "To whom coming, as unto a living stone, disallowed indeed of men, but chosen of God, and precious. ... 7. Unto you therefore which believe He is precious: but unto them which be disobedient, the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner."

### 2. We must overcome self and the world by total submission to the Word of God.

- 1 Peter 5:6 – 7* "Humble yourselves therefore under the mighty hand of God, that He may exalt you in due time: 7. Casting all your care upon Him; for He careth for you."

### 3. We must pray to God the Father, knowing that :

- i. He wants to give me help.  
*Jeremiah 31:3* "The LORD hath appeared of old unto me, saying, Yea, I have loved thee with an everlasting love: therefore with lovingkindness have I drawn thee."
- ii. Christ means so much to Him that any man coming to God through Christ finds that God is already waiting to receive his request, to welcome his approach.  
*Hebrews 7:25* "Wherefore He is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by Him, seeing He ever liveth to make intercession for them."

## Day 10 – Caught Away to Eternity

### 1 Thess 4:16–18

"For the Lord Himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: 17. Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord. 18. Wherefore comfort one another with these words."

### Snatched Away Home

The Church of God, every member living the Life of God on the earth, by the Divine Energy of the Spirit of God operating through the written Word of God – this divinely living Church, who live by the Faith of the Son of God, who obey the Word of God rather than men – will be **taken out of this world, caught away**, into God's Home, God's Presence, physically, suddenly, by that same Holy Spirit, without any notice; *"in such an hour as ye think not"* [Matthew 24:44]!

Just when you, as a member of This Church, think it unlikely to happen, that is when it will happen! Those people who are not born again, who have not repented, will not be looking out in any case for this Shout, but we who are members, we too shall find that Christ will come when at that moment we might not be wanting Him to come...

So this very teaching of Christ's, the sudden Coming of the Head for His Body, must cause us to plan. The action is far too swift for any change to be affected then; we will only know it has happened when it has happened!!

### 1 Corinthians 15:50 – 54

*"Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption. 51. Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, 52. In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. 53. For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality. 54. So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory."*

We were born in sin, and so flesh and blood represents my human life, infected with desires, ways, thoughts, that are not of God, and so cannot inherit Eternal Life. Someone living a Christ-like life will need to be given a body to survive God's Glory and Presence, which a flesh and blood body could not. A body such as ours liable to corruption cannot control a place which has no corruption. If I don't have Christ, death opens out endless horror. There is no horror if I have Christ in my life. Truly, to have Him, I will be free!

Living or dead, as a Christian, at the last Trump, we shall be changed. If Christ is my Life, my body may die, but I – my spirit – won't die. "[C]hanged" – a physical change must follow a spiritual change. But I must first have been thoroughly changed to God, not a changed religion, habits, nationality, language, but changed completely God-ward. What God wants, we want. It is a must, a certainty, that the Holy Spirit will change living and dead people – innumerable – to meet their descending Lord.

Death will have vanished away in the wonderful Victory of thousands of people translated in the air to have new physical bodies. No help from man is necessary! I won't need human means of guidance, compasses, to get to the Meeting Point – God will take me there. So I should let Him look after me now!

I must let Him show me the Way, for only His kind of person can give us the things our immortal souls are longing for. Death will vanish in Victory; death caused by sin. This Act of God is a physical proof that there is deliverance from sin and death. We will always have the Victory. It will be a physical Victory to be able to live in a body in which I can talk to God and walk about the Universe, endlessly... Here we have to live and work for Christ, “*abounding*” and increasingly preach to men by our lives and Word that this system is doomed; that Christ only is the Answer – “*abounding in the work of the Lord*” [1 Corinthians 15:58].

It is the exuberant, eagerness of the Holy Ghost to take the Church Home to God.

## 2 Corinthians 4:7 – 15

*“But we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellency of the power may be of God, and not of us. 8. We are troubled on every side, yet not distressed; we are perplexed, but not in despair; 9. Persecuted, but not forsaken; cast down, but not destroyed; 10. Always bearing about in the body the dying of the Lord Jesus, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our body. 11. For we which live are always delivered unto death for Jesus’ sake, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our mortal flesh. 12. So then death worketh in us, but life in you. 13. We having the same spirit of faith, according as it is written, I believed, and therefore have I spoken; we also believe, and therefore speak; 14. Knowing that He which raised up the Lord Jesus shall raise up us also by Jesus, and shall present us with you. 15. For all things are for your sakes, that the abundant grace might through the thanksgiving of many redound to the glory of God.”*

As Christians it is possible to show actually the Life of Christ lived out in our lives. The Holy Ghost will raise from the dead God's Church. This exuberant Energy, the Holy Ghost in me, will always give me the sense of always overcoming in my life.

When I have a new body I will always be filled with Joy. The abundant Grace of God in raising me from the dead will cause peals of triumph from countless changed bodies! In that instant, following the Resurrection of the dead in Christ, that same Holy Spirit will give to those alive and waiting, a new physical body. He will give us new bodies and catch us up with those who have been raised from the dead – for the Holy Spirit will be in dynamic Action! – to meet the Lord Jesus in the Air!

For the Spirit of God to dwell in you, means you are controlled by Him. If that Spirit dwells in me, then words of comfort should come out from my mouth. This Fact that the Spirit keeps bringing before our eyes, Jesus Christ in all His Humility, revealing God's Forgiveness for me, is God's determination to have me to live with Him.

**1 Thessalonians 4:16 – 18** *“For the Lord Himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: 17. Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord. 18. Wherefore comfort one another with these words.”* To be “*caught up*” doesn't mean picked up, but snatched up – we're snatched away from this world! The Church of the Living God will at long last meet its Living Head!



If I do not have this longing in my heart, then I must now begin to look at Jesus Christ as He is in the Scriptures. If I don't see Him there, how can I long to see Him when He comes? As the Church, we should long to see Him, because we should look, talk, and be like Him.

Christ's Presence in Heaven in His Resurrected physical Body is the reason for His Church to receive new physical bodies. That is what His words, "*I am the Resurrection, and the Life*" means [John 11:25]. The Presence of that marred Body in Heaven is a Guarantee that this Resurrection of the dead will surely take place, and also for the living...

We will be changed from sickness to immortality. Sickness is a horrible thing. "*I am the Resurrection, and the Life*" means that if Christ was not resurrected then we could not have life. Or, if I am not going to be resurrected as described then I won't have life. "*And if Christ be not raised, your faith is vain; ye are yet in your sins*", said Paul in 1 Corinthians 15:17. Christ's Resurrected Body is my Assurance. This Fact should make me plan for that Moment... I can't plan beyond that Moment, for the initiative will be in God's Hand! This is the Life God is giving to me...

**Ephesians 2:7**                      "*That in the ages to come He might shew the exceeding riches of His grace in His kindness toward us through Christ Jesus.*" Through endless Ages God will be giving me things; doing things for me...

**John 11:25**                      "*Jesus said unto her, [Martha] I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in Me, though he were dead, yet shall he live.*"

Faith in Christ will break the natural laws. The natural law means my body rots and where my spirit is I will be without a body. It will be a sleep; not living a full life, yet I shall live in a physical body. If I have not a body to live in Heaven, how can I enjoy God? In the Presence of Christ, God's Joy knows no bounds. There are countless blessings to be poured out upon us!

### Always Led By the Spirit

To be ready for this immediate, sudden irresistible Final Change, which will come without notice, every member of the Church must be living always in obedience to the Spirit, as He leads us according to His holy Written Word.

**Luke 19:11 – 13**                      "*And as they heard these things, He added and spake a parable, because He was nigh to Jerusalem, and because they thought that the kingdom of God should immediately appear. 12. He said therefore, A certain nobleman went into a far country to receive for himself a kingdom, and to return. 13. And he called his ten servants, and delivered them ten pounds, and said unto them, Occupy till I come.*" We can't force God's Plan, or His hand... We want everything at once, but we can only have everything if we have Christ.

If I have Christ, then all these other things shall be added to me: the Kingdom of God, Eternal Life, meeting God finally... No Christian should be discontented, dissatisfied. If I am obeying God's Word, I am living a full-time life! "*Occupy*" means to do business with what He has given us. We have all been offered Jesus Christ.

To obey God means to live in the closest possible contact with Christ. It is a full-time job! I am fully occupied loving God by serving His Son. More people would be attracted if they saw This Life. It is possible that we have become religious... But we do want God; we do want that lovely Life of Jesus Christ...

It is a sheer Joy to be alive today with Christ. God is the Father of the Family. The Holy Spirit is here to take us direct to the Fountain of Life, to be occupied in obeying God's Word by the Spirit. God's Spirit only can show us This Life – I have Christ's Life! We have a Hope – we must have the Power to communicate convincingly the Life of Christ to someone else. If I am occupied in this way then I will hear the shout of Christ by His Spirit, to come up Here! It will be a Shout of enthusiasm!

This could only be heard by His Spirit. The archangel's shout will summons the armies of heaven to greet their Captain and His mighty Body, the Church! The Trumpet of God will be blown. That bugle will sound, and the Church will go to be with Christ!

### **John 10:24 – 30**

*"Then came the Jews round about Him, and said unto Him, How long dost Thou make us to doubt? If Thou be the Christ, tell us plainly. 25. Jesus answered them, I told you, and ye believed not: the works that I do in My Father's name, they bear witness of Me. 26. But ye believe not, because ye are not of My sheep, as I said unto you. 27. My sheep hear My voice, and I know them, and they follow Me: 28. And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of My hand. 29. My Father, which gave them Me, is greater than all; and no man is able to pluck them out of My Father's hand. 30. I and My Father are one."*

They refused to believe His Word and so they were in a dilemma. *"My sheep hear My voice ... and they follow Me:"* – right into Heaven! Into Eternity! When Christ takes His Church, no one will take them again – the conflict will be gone. This world's way will no longer offend my eyes and my life. The thing is to become a member of That Church!

**1 Corinthians 15:19** *"If in this life only we have hope in Christ, we are of all men most miserable."* Living just for this life means living a self-righteous life. A true child of God plans, lives, for Eternity. No one is such a misery or a bore as a religious person! I can't have my own way and His Way. I can't be happy torn between the two. Be occupied with Christ! And that means living a full life doing what God wants in His holy Word by His Spirit. The Church of God has no ambitions for this life at all. If you have, pack them up! It also puts aside living as this world lives.

### **Philippians 3:17 – 21**

*Brethren, be followers together of me, and mark them which walk so as ye have us for an ensample. 18. (For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping, that they are the enemies of the cross of Christ: 19. Whose end is destruction, whose God is their belly, and whose glory is in their shame, who mind earthly things.) 20. For our conversation is in heaven; from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ: 21. Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto His glorious body, according to the working whereby He is able even to subdue all things unto Himself."*

They do not accept the Christian way of thinking – that this world's system is doomed to destruction. *"[W]hose glory is in their shame"* – they don't have God as their End while they mind earthly things – that is all they do. Their eyes are in this world. *"[O]ur conversation"* – our way of life and thinking – is in Heaven [v20]. It means my citizenship, the Place where I belong; where I started my life in Christ.

All my life is up There, so I refer to Heaven through the Holy Spirit. My way of thinking, living, conducting my affairs should be found to be the same as exists in Heaven – Heaven which is God's Eternal world, the Kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.

**Psalm 73:25 – 26**

*"Whom have I in heaven but Thee? and there is none upon earth that I desire beside Thee. 26. My flesh and My heart faileth: but God is the strength of My heart, and My portion for ever."* From our point of view, wherever Christ is that's where Life

is; from Christ's part, on the Cross, His heart was failing physically.

One Vision for The Church

The Church of God, then, has one Vision; one Outlook – and only one.

**1 Thessalonians 1:6 – 10**

*"And ye became followers of us, and of the Lord, having received the word in much affliction, with joy of the Holy Ghost: 7. So that ye were ensamples to all that believe in Macedonia and Achaia. 8. For from you sounded out the word of the Lord not only in Macedonia and Achaia, but also in every place your faith to God-ward is spread abroad; so that we need not to speak any thing. 9. For they themselves shew of us what manner of entering in we had unto you, and how ye turned to God from idols to serve the living and true God; 10. And to wait for His Son from heaven, whom He raised from the dead, even Jesus, which delivered us from the wrath to come."*

This church was a real light, an inspiration that God was in them. What a happy situation – a live church! They were the testimonies that Jesus is coming as they sounded forth their faith God-ward.

The Heavenly Life is another world in which Love really exists, where self is completely non-existent. That is how they occupied themselves; their church was well-known for their heavenly lives, for their showing Jesus Christ. If I have a certainty that Christ is coming for me, I will live a Christian life fully...

The Church of God, as founded by God, with its Head as Jesus Christ – this is the Church to which we say we belong – then we should have one Vision – **the Return of Christ from Heaven**. If any one will hear, let him hear this Truth from you, and be saved from the wrath to come. This church lived sure that they would never be lost, because Christ was in them; they had no other God. The Church of God then, has **One Vision** – waiting to see Christ, satisfied with His Spirit and with His Word.

**1 Corinthians 1:4 – 9**

*"I thank my God always on your behalf, for the grace of God which is given you by Jesus Christ; 5. That in every thing ye are enriched by Him, in all utterance, and in all knowledge; 6. Even as the testimony of Christ was confirmed in you: 7. So that ye come behind in no gift; waiting for the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ: 8. Who shall also confirm you unto the end, that ye may be blameless in the day of our Lord Jesus Christ. 9. God is faithful, by whom ye were called unto the fellowship of His Son Jesus Christ our Lord."*

The testimony of Christ confirmed in you means the Holy Spirit is filling you. The repetition of Christ's Name gives us food for thought – this is the Church's attitude: so sure that He will come that they are ready for Him. In every good word uttered, as the fruit of our lives, is the evidence of the Gift of God – the Spirit of God.

**Titus 2:7 – 15**

*"In all things shewing thyself a pattern of good works: in doctrine shewing uncorruptness, gravity, sincerity, 8. Sound speech, that cannot be condemned; that he that is of the contrary part may be ashamed, having no evil thing to say of you. 9. Exhort servants to be obedient unto their own masters, and to please them well in all things; not answering again; 10. Not purloining, but shewing all good fidelity; that they may adorn the doctrine of God our Saviour in all things. 11. For the grace of God that bringeth salvation hath appeared to all men, 12. Teaching us that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly, in this present world; 13. Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ; 14. Who gave Himself for us, that He might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto Himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works. 15. These things speak, and exhort, and rebuke with all authority. Let no man despise thee."*

v12

*"...we should live soberly – **watchfully** – righteously – **obediently** – and godly – **victoriously** – in this present world."* Doing all these things, living these out in

this world, then we look with assurance that He will come and at a time that He knows best! Christ paid the Price that God required to **reconcile** us, that is, to change us to God, and to **restore** to us the Life of God, the Spirit of God – to redeem us by paying the Price.

Another church that was given this Vision was the Hebrew church :

**Hebrews 9:23 – 28**

*"It was therefore necessary that the patterns of things in the heavens should be purified with these; but the heavenly things themselves with better sacrifices than these. 24. For Christ is not entered into the holy places made with hands, which are the figures of the true; but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us: 25. Nor yet that He should offer Himself often, as the high priest entereth into the holy place every year with blood of others; 26. For then must He often have suffered since the foundation of the world: but now once in the end of the world hath He appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of Himself. 27. And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment: 28. So Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many; and unto them that look for Him shall He appear the second time without sin unto salvation."*

They were transferred by the Grace of God as revealed in Christ Jesus, to look for Him – their Foundation – from Heaven. In the same proportion to which I am thankful to God for putting my sins away, in that proportion I will look for His Coming. If it is little, the fact of His coming will move me little...

This Offering had fixed their lives on God forever. Christ's coming back again: that was their Life!

**2 Timothy 4:1 – 8**

*"I charge thee therefore before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, who shall judge the quick and the dead at His appearing and His kingdom; 2. Preach the word; be instant in season, out of season; reprove, rebuke, exhort with all longsuffering and doctrine. 3. For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears; 4. And they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables. 5. But watch thou in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an evangelist, make full proof of thy ministry. 6. For I am now ready to be offered, and the time of my departure is at hand. 7. I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith: 8. Henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous judge, shall give me at that day: and not to me only, but unto all them also that love His appearing."*

This was the outlook of the Church: Confident of their Eternal Destiny. Unless I suffer for Jesus' sake, I won't know the Love of God. Christ is his guarantee that the old Paul is dead, so he is confident of his Eternal Destiny. If I want to live with Jesus Christ, my Destiny is always assured; my Future is always sure!

**"The Coming"**: it doesn't mean the time it takes, but His immediate physical arrival, at the point, the declared and decided spot. Consider what is said in these next two verses :

**1 Corinthians 16:17**      *"I am glad of the coming of Stephanas and Fortunatus and Achaicus: for that which was lacking on your part they have supplied."* We can see that "the coming of" meant their being with Paul; their having arrived!

**2 Corinthians 7:6**      *"And not by his [Titus] coming only, but by the consolation wherewith he was comforted in you..."* The same meaning – Titus had arrived.

It, the Church, is so enamoured with JESUS, that it loves to live the Cross Life!

**1 Thessalonians 2:19**      *"For what is our hope, or joy, or crown of rejoicing? Are not even ye in the presence of our Lord Jesus Christ at His coming?"* When Christ is there, then it will be important that our hearts are blameless in holiness before God. It is important what I am, when He arrives, when I stand before Him.

**1 Thessalonians 5:23**      *"And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray God your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ."* – preserved up to the time of Christ's physical Arrival – "unto the coming". I won't know that Christ has come until I am there! This Fact is important when you realise that it is a Physical Arrival.

**1 Thessalonians 4:16**      *"For the Lord Himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first."* It is **"the Lord Himself"** Who is coming!

**Luke 24:39**      *"Behold My hands and My feet, that it is I Myself: handle Me and see; for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see Me have."* When Christ arrives I must already have been ready to meet Him. He is a terribly marred Person. He is a most Extra-ordinary Man – full of God's Glory and disfigured! When I have determined that I will meet This type of Person, then I am determined to meet JESUS!

**2 Timothy 2:8**      *"Remember that Jesus Christ of the seed of David was raised from the dead according to my gospel."* He was of the "seed of David" – there is a real Man! It will be a real Meeting with two people who are real. Christ is real, and I am real! He is flesh and bones; I will be flesh and bones! In a new body, I will come face to Face with Jesus Christ in His physical, marred Body.

**Isaiah 33:14 – 17**

<p><i>"The sinners in Zion are afraid; fearfulness hath surprised the hypocrites. Who among us shall dwell with the devouring fire? who among us shall dwell with everlasting burnings? 15. He that walketh</i></p>	<p><i>righteously, and speaketh uprightly; he that despiseth the gain of oppressions, that shaketh his hands from holding of bribes, that stoppeth his ears from hearing of blood, and shutteth his eyes from seeing evil; 16. He shall dwell</i></p>	<p><i>on high: his place of defence shall be the munitions of rocks: bread shall be given him; his waters shall be sure. 17. Thine eyes shall see the king in His beauty: they shall behold the land that is very far off."</i></p>
---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------

I will see Him, and know that This is Someone Who at last meets all my longings – This Physical Person. We were not made to be satisfied with anyone else. This is the Answer, for, how can I know His Son unless I get to know His Son?! All my desires, longings, hopes are all realised when I meet Christ. When I decide that when I see Christ all my longings shall be met, then I am waiting for JESUS!

**1 Corinthians 2:8**                    *“Which none of the princes of this world knew: for had they known it, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory.”* It is a Man that is described as “the Lord of glory”. I **must know** Who This Person is.

We, having been the objective of all that Redemption, we ought to know Who we are going to meet. I am going to meet Someone Who is going to take me into the Physical Presence of God, the One I have prayed to, lived for ... – to see God’s beauty, His Holiness, His Love. It is a Physical Reality.

**1 Corinthians 15:47**                *“The first man is of the earth, earthy: the second man is the Lord from heaven.”* I am born again; I’ve a new life; I need a new body – hands to lift up and worship God with, eyes to see Him with... I’m going to meet Someone Who is God’s First Obedient Man – I must have these Facts real in my life – He is Someone Who knows every heart; Someone so important. I’m going to live with Him Who is important to God, Who is First in His thoughts. “[T]o die is gain” [Philippians 1:21] – I will see Him face to Face!

**Revelation 22:16**                *“I Jesus have sent Mine angel to testify unto you these things in the churches. I am the root and the offspring of David, and the bright and morning star.”* It is a Physical Appearance. These are physical things, the “root” – the Founder of David – and “offspring” – the Heir to David’s throne, the Final Heir – the “bright and morning star” – the assurance that there is a Morning. He is a Real Assurance of Heaven, a Physical Reality.

**Hebrews 1:3**                        *“Who being the brightness of His glory, and the express image of His person, and upholding all things by the word of His power, when He had by Himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high.”* I have got to know Who I am meeting – what He is, Who He is... The express Image of God! When I see Christ, I will see the Reality of God. As I stand before Christ, I won’t be amazed, I’ll be wanting to go on in and see God! I will have arrived! I won’t be reading about a Person sitting on the Throne any more!

**Revelation 4:2 – 3**                *“And immediately I was in the spirit: and, behold, a throne was set in heaven, and one sat on the throne. 3. And He that sat was to look upon like a jasper and a sardine stone: and there was a rainbow round about the throne, in sight like unto an emerald.”* John couldn’t get close enough to see God, but when we see Christ in all His Glory, scarred, then I’ll know that I’ll be henceforth and forever with God!

**Malachi 3:1**                        *“Behold, I will send My messenger, and he shall prepare the way before Me: and the Lord, whom ye seek, shall suddenly come to His temple, even the messenger of the covenant, whom ye delight in: behold, He shall come, saith the LORD of hosts.”* Christ is “the messenger of the covenant” – as I stand before this Man, then I’ll know to the full the fullness of God’s Promises; that God kept me from all that would destroy my life.

As I stand before Him I’ll realise to the full that all God’s Promises have been fulfilled, because He, Christ, is the Fulfilment of them. It won’t be a long journey – the Holy Spirit won’t waste time!

Not only is the Coming Physical, but it is also Personal. God and Christ have a view of me...

**1 Peter 5:4** *"And when the chief Shepherd shall appear, ye shall receive a crown of glory that fadeth not away."* He is a Shepherd, which is essentially someone who cares for his flock. We shall right away receive something from Him – to encourage us to feel at Home in God's Eternity. He will give me a crown of glory!

Don't forget when you get up There you will be Home!! That is the Home to work for, and then this home here will have the fragrance of that Home.

**John 10:14** *"I am the good shepherd, and know My sheep, and am known of Mine."* The sheep know the kind of person the shepherd is, just as God knows the kind of Person He is. The Father and the sheep know that He is the Good Shepherd; that He has paid the Price to the Father, to become my Shepherd.

**Hebrews 13:20** *"Now the God of peace, that brought again from the dead our Lord Jesus, that great Shepherd of the sheep, through the blood of the everlasting covenant."* This Shepherd is a frightening antagonist to all the wolves who prowl around the fold. He provides for me in every way, making me at Home in God's Presence. He won't allow ravenous beasts to harm His sheep. They will die, but the sheep will live on forever.

**Psalms 23:1 – 6**

<p><i>"The LORD is my shepherd; I shall not want. 2. He maketh me to lie down in green pastures: He leadeth me beside the still waters. 3. He restoreth my soul: He leadeth me in the paths of</i></p>	<p><i>righteousness for His name's sake. 4. Yea, though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil: for Thou art with me; Thy rod and Thy staff they comfort me. 5. Thou preparest a</i></p>	<p><i>table before me in the presence of mine enemies: Thou anointest my head with oil; my cup runneth over. 6. Surely goodness and mercy shall follow me all the days of my life: and I will dwell in the house of the LORD for ever."</i></p>
--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------

There will be no striving in Heaven – like lying down in green pastures with still waters – no more disturbing sin. Christ has met me at the entrance of my new life. He leads me in the paths of Righteousness – there are no other ways in Heaven. Even if I have to die, all is well, because He is with me through that little bit of passage. *"Thy rod and Thy staff"* – the Word and by His comfort, they comfort me; they will see me through. When we take part in the Marriage Supper of the Lamb, the world will still be sinful. In the presence of my enemies, as it were, God has prepared His table; God will be free to pour out His Blessings. Surely Goodness and Mercy, all through Eternity, God's Provision will be there. Christ will be there! I will know God's Loving Care and I will dwell in the House of the Lord forever!!

**Revelation 16:15** *"Behold, I come as a thief. Blessed is he that watcheth, and keepeth his garments, lest he walk naked, and they see his shame."* Christ is coming as a thief to steal us away quickly without anyone stopping us! This shows the eagerness of Love! He will snatch us away so that no one will be able to get ready to hold us back.

**John 11:25** *"Jesus said unto her, [Martha] I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in Me, though he were dead, yet shall he live."* As He is, so shall we be – He has a new Body, in that sense; it is bloodless now; new, as *"a Lamb as it had been slain"* [Revelation 5:6]. I will have a new body, without blood, and living by the Spirit. It will be a Spirit-life and not a blood-life...

**Revelation 1:17 – 18**

*“And when I saw Him, I fell at His feet as dead. And He laid His right hand upon me, saying unto me, Fear not; I am the first and the last: 18. I am He that liveth, and was dead; and, behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen; and have the keys of hell and of death.”*

John saw Christ and fell at His feet in great fear – but it wasn’t anything to separate him from Christ. “Fear not” – ‘I’m always the same’, He was saying to John.

When I get to that point of seeing Christ, I will see His enthusiasm to live with the sons of men. We should understand that it will be an enthusiastic Meeting, not only from His side – the Church also will shout for joy! He wants us to enjoy God, not to be paralytic with fear...

**Revelation 22:13**

*“I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last.”* Christ is a Personal Saviour – each one of us means something to Him personally! He will give me a gift personally, because He paid the Price for me personally. I am going to have a personal Meeting with Christ for He has something to give me.

**Hosea 6:3**

*“Then shall we know, if we follow on to know the LORD: His going forth is prepared as the morning; and He shall come unto us as the rain, as the latter and former rain unto the earth.”* Then shall we know all these truths. First of all, I am sure that

His going forth is prepared as the morning – so sure the marks [upon Him] are a surety of His Return. Also, when He comes for us, we will know Him as the Latter Rain, as we will have already accepted the gracious Word He has given.

When He comes, He will have what He wants, and I will have what I’ve longed for! There will be no more longing, but an enjoying of Christ’s Presence; from Glory to Glory – not Friday to Monday! or from April to April! Everything has to go to have that Pearl... I’ll get through those gates to God by Jesus Christ.

**Isaiah 32:1 – 2**

*“Behold, a king shall reign in righteousness, and princes shall rule in judgment. 2. And a man shall be as an hiding place from the wind, and a covert from the tempest; as rivers of water in a dry place, as the shadow of a great rock in a weary land.”* The

condition of life that is described as ‘Rest’, is there in That Man, Jesus Christ. No more will we be in the presence of sin; no strain, no tension – no more the shame of the presence of sin...

He is described as *“rivers of water in a dry place”* – there will be no more crying out for help by faith, because I’ll see God standing before me! No more looking up to Heaven, looking for Him! No more crying out to God to know His Love more, because I will see Him face to Face! Hallelujah!!

## THE CONCLUSION OF OUR MEDITATION ON “CAUGHT AWAY TO ETERNITY”

1. If I love someone, I welcome their sudden arrival. I don’t think of it as an intrusion.



2. God’s timing is reckoned from Glory to Glory instead of from day to day! And,
3. If we are occupied by God’s Spirit in obeying God’s Word, as it is written, we shall hear the Shout of Christ, the Trump of God, and the voice of the archangel – and be saved for Eternity!!

**Romans 8:11 – 13**

*“But if the Spirit of Him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, He that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by His Spirit that dwelleth in you. 12. Therefore, brethren, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh. 13. For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live.”*

-O-O-O-O-O-O-O-O-O-O-

*To the Reader : As you have applied yourself to reading, meditating and absorbing the vast wealth of Scriptures included in these teachings, may your heart be truly filled with a rich Knowledge of **God** : God **Who first brought the Church into being**, God **Who paid such an enormous Price at such a great Eternal Cost** that you may be found always waiting and ready to be snatched away by God **Who controls the Church** for Jesus Christ!*

## OTHER BOOKS

### Introducing The Book of Revelation :

A4 size. A Set of Seven Chapters seeking to address a lack of focus on the Person of Jesus Christ. **£12.99**

A5 size. Twelve easy to follow Topics, travelling through God's Final Message to mankind, investigating "those things" which John saw and recorded. *Volume 1.* **£7.99**

A5 size. Considering the Names, Titles and Descriptions of the Lord Jesus Christ within this Book of Prophecy and their relevance to it. *Volume 2.* **£8.99**

A5 size. A walk through the twenty two Chapters of this oft-forgotten Book of Prophecy. *Volume 3.* **£9.99**

### Let's Get It Right!

A5 size. A Series of 10 stimulating Questions and Answers giving renewed meaning to commonly misquoted Scriptures. **£5.95**

### The Blood of Sprinkling

Quarto size. Expounding *Hebrews 12:24* in Fifteen Holy Spirit-inspired Pastoral studies on the power of The Blood of Christ. **£7.99**

### The Church of God In This Age

Quarto size. The second "away" Studies on God's View of the Church, meditating in Ten Topics its Power and its Position. **£11.99**

**Understanding The Book of Hebrews** Quarto size. The recordings and notes from the weekly adult Bible Study collected in one volume as a clear and powerful meditation of the Finished Work of Christ **£10.99**

*All books are comb-bound with durable covers.  
Prices include postage. Cheques payable to T. E. Parker*

Available from:  
**Bâsar Blessings**  
PO Box 5937  
Bournemouth BH6 4WY  
[basar\\_blessings@wick1.plus.com](mailto:basar_blessings@wick1.plus.com)  
[www.basar-blessings.org](http://www.basar-blessings.org)

---

*The Church of God – Jesus Christ*  
Price: **£8.99** (including postage / local delivery)